

IBERIAN TALES

A N D NOVELS.

As they were Publickly Re-
hearsed for the Entertainment of
the *Spanish* Nobility : By that Ce-
lebrated Lady Donna *Isabella*.

CONTAINING

Many Surprizing Amours and Gal-
lantries of the Present Court of *Spain*,
and other Foreign Nations.

*The Heart-pierc'd Lover here a Cure may gain,
Ladies the best Physicians are in Spain ;
Rove not to Heathen-Climes for Moral Rules,
Venus has Pupils in all Christian Schools :
If a due Warmth in Flavia's Breast prevails,
For Bliss Extatic, read Iberian Tales.*

L O N D O N :

Printed in the Year, M,DCC,XLV.

[Price Four Shillings.]

13 ER I A W

T A L E S

A M D

M O V E L



C O S

and of the London

1753

Printed in London

by J. Smith



IBERIAN TALES.

*A Letter from an English Gentle-
man at the Court of Madrid, to
his Friend in London.*

S I R,

Have not thought it proper,
since my Arrival at this Place,
to send any of the common
News it affords, you being
there so plentifully supply'd
with that Sort of Commodity from all

B

Parts

Parts of the World, and my Intelligence not reaching so high, as to furnish any Thing extraordinary. Besides, you know my Genius is not turned for Politicks; and I am more fond of spending my Hours in good Company, than of being let into all the Mysteries of State. Amidst all the Diversions I have found out here, you have always been in my Thoughts, and I have often wish'd to meet with something entertaining, which might be worth imparting to you.

Fortune, at length, has proved favourable, in enabling me to furnish you with a Relation suitable to my Inclination, which will scarce occur in any of your News-Papers, and yet may, I hope, be acceptable to you. Being indifferently vers'd in the *Spanish* Tongue, I have made it my Business to become acquainted among some of the gayest young Gentlemen of this Court, and have not been disappointed of my Expectation, being let into a Society very much to my Satisfaction.

You know Drinking is no fashionable Folly in *Spain*; we live sober, but have excellent Conversation, and all other Recreations. Those Gentlemen I have mention'd, a few Days ago conducted me

to

to the House of one of their Friends, where a good Number of us being met, we had the Happiness of the Company of several Ladies of considerable Quality. After the usual Civilities, which are paid in an extraordinary Manner to Strangers, and some little Discourse befitting such an Assembly, the Lady of the House acquainted us, that she had a most beautiful Woman-Slave, who had begg'd Leave she might entertain her Friends with a most surprizing Relation, the Truth of every Particular whereof, she could attest upon her own Knowledge. All there present, not only approv'd of the Motion, but became Suitors, that the Slave might be admitted.

She was call'd, and when every one expected a tawny *African*, in mean Apparel, as became a servile Condition, there appear'd a most beautiful Creature, in a costly *Moorish* Habit. Her Smock was of the finest Cambrick, with Sleeves almost as wide as a Surplice, and so thin, that they were transparent, with curious broad *Flanders* Laces at the Wrists and Neck, and narrow ones between the Seams. Her upper Coat was of rich Tissue, with three massive gold Laces, reaching down only to her Ancles,

so that her Feet appear'd, on which she wore Sandals, adorn'd with many Ribbons, and some Jewels. Instead of Stays, she wore a *Moorish* Waistcoat, of the same Cloth of Silver, with Sleeves as wide as those of her Shift, so that her delicate white naked Arms appear'd, adorn'd with costly Bracelets. Her long brown Hair hung loose on her Back, whence it reach'd down to the Ground, being gather'd on her Head, instead of a Fillet, with a Chain of Diamonds, and to the Top of her Hair was pinn'd a delicate Veil, of Silver and Blue, reaching thence to her Heels: In this Manner she appear'd, more like an Empress of *Morocco*, or a *Turkish* Sultana, than a Slave.

The Ladies and Gentlemen were amaz'd at this Sight, and above all, her own Lady, who had never seen this Dress. All admir'd, but none spoke a Word, expecting she would herself, in it's proper Time, satisfy their Curiosity. Her Beauty was so enhans'd with this costly Dress, that notwithstanding the Brand on her Face, (which is the Mark of a Slave) some of the Gentlemen could have been satisfy'd to make her Mistress of all they had. When she had made
her

her Obeisance to all the Company in general, and to her Mistress in particular, she seated herself in the Place appointed for her, and gave the Company the following Recital of her Life to that Time.



The SLAVE's History.

MY Name is Donna *Isabel Faxardo*, and not *Zelima*; nor am I a *Moor*, as you imagine, but a Christian, born of Catholick Parents, and those of the best Quality, in the City of *Murcia*; for the Brand you see on my Face, is but a Shadow of the real Brand a Man's Baseness has left upon my Quality and Reputation; and that you may give the more Credit to me see here it is off. Would to God I could as easily remove that which my Misfortunes and Follies have fix'd upon my Soul. So saying, she took off the Brand, and threw it away, leaving no Sign of Spot or Blemish on her charming Countenance, and her glorious Beauty to shine bright without the Obstacle of that Cloud. The

Spectators were amaz'd, fixing their Eyes on her, as if she had been something more than human; the Gallants were in Love, and the Ladies almost envious, and yet all of them doubting whether she was more beautiful with the Brand or without it. Donna *Isabel* having given them a short Time to gaze, and perceiving they were all silent, proceeded after this Manner.

I am the only Child my Parents had, that I alone might be the Ruin of their Family. What Beauty fell to my Share, you may behold; my Quality I have told you, and for Wealth, I had enough to have made me wiser, or to secure me a considerable Husband, had I not been unfortunate. 'Till twelve Years of Age, I was brought up with all possible Care and Tenderness, and instructed in all Things that became my Quality, and had a Genius that carry'd me to take every Thing with Ease and Perfection. Pardon my commending myself, since I have no Body to speak for me; and I do it for the Sake of Truth, and not out of Vanity. I was excellent at Singing, playing on the Musick, Dancing, and above all, at Versifying; for which I was envied by very many, who might rather

rather have pitied me, since these Qualifications, and especially the two last, are most frequently the Bane of Women. At fourteen Years of Age, there were so many Pretenders to me, that my Father, out of Patience, bid them all stay 'till I was a Woman; but they, as they said, doating on me, could not forbear importuning of him.

Among the rest, the most passionate Lover was one Don *Philip*, a Gentleman but a few Years elder than my self, excellently qualified, and of good Birth, but wholly destitute of the Blessings of Fortune; for he was so poor, that few took any Notice of him (the general Misfortune attending Poverty). This Gentleman endeavoured to gain my Affection by Assiduity, Sighs, and Tears, but I was like the rest of the World; and my Servants, perceiving I had no Kindness for him, never would take any more Notice of him, than I did, which was very conducing towards his not being known afterwards upon another Occasion. Would to God I had countenanc'd him, for so I might have prevented the many Misfortunes that have attended me; but being poor, how could my Vanity condescend to regard him! Though I had

enough to have served us both, yet I took so little Notice of him, that I could never say what Face he had, 'till I was plung'd into my Calamities.

At this Time happen'd the Rebellion in *Catalonia*, for a Punishment of our Sins, or of mine in particular; for though the Losses have been great in general, yet none greater than mine, for those who have died on this Occasion, gain'd eternal Fame, and I have surviv'd with Infamy. The News being brought to *Murcia*, that his Majesty was going into the Kingdom of *Arragon*, to be near at Hand to suppress the Rebellion; my Father, who had spent most of his Youth in the Service, considering his Majesty stood in Need of Men of Experience, resolved to go and make a Tender of his Person, hoping to receive the Reward of his past and present Services at once.

My Mother and I, were both so much concern'd to part with him, that, complying with our Importunity, he agreed to take us along with him, which turned all our Sorrow into Joy, and particularly mine, who being so young, was willing to see other Parts; but it was my Fate that led me to my Ruin. We set out from *Murcia* with such an Equipage

as

as might become the ancient Family of the *Faxado's* of that Kingdom. My Absence was much lamented and celebrated by the best Wits of the City. At *Saragoza*, we took an Apartment in one of the best Houses, and after resting some Days and settling our Family, I went abroad to see and be seen : But this was not the Cause of my Disasters, for that was within our own House, and there my ill Fortune found me, without going abroad to seek it. I know not what Share of Beauty I had, yet such as it was, it began to be applauded, as if that City had not abounded in charming Ladies. My Father kiss'd the King's Hand, who being informed of his past Actions, and finding in him still Vigour to proceed, gave him a Regiment of Horse, and honour'd him with the most noble Order of Knighthood of *Calatrava*.

The Landlady of the House we liv'd in, was a Widow-Gentlewoman of Quality, very rich, and had a Son and a Daughter : The Youth was handsome, and ingenious ; (would to God he had not been false and treacherous !) his Name *Don Manuel*, his Surname I will not discover, since he was a Dishonour to it. The Daughter was young, and indiffe-

rent handsome, her Name Donna *Eufraſia*, and ſhe was to marry a Kinſman of her own, who was in the *West-Indies*, and expected with the next Fleet.

She and I took ſuch a Liking to one another, as our Mothers had done, that we were ſcarce ever aſunder, unleſs it were at Bed-Time, either in her Apartment, or in mine. We were known throughout the City, by the Name of the two Friends; and her Brother, Don *Manuel*, fell in Love, or made it his Buſineſs to deceive me, which is all one..

At firſt, I ſlighted and ſhun'd his Courtſhip, looking upon it as a Dero-gation of my Quality and Modeſty; inſomuch that, to avoid it, I forbore his Siſter's Company as often as I could do it without giving Offence; which Don *Manuel*, ſo heinouſly reſented, ſhewing himſelf full of Melancholy and Deſpair, that ſometimes I could not but pity him, conſidering that my Severity impair'd his Health.

I had no Diſlike to Don *Manuel*, though I did not ſhew it, and could have been contented, ſince I was to have a Huſband, that he had been the happy Man: But, alas! he had another Deſign;
for

for tho' there were so many that aspir'd to me; he never oppos'd them; and my Father was so vainly fond of me, that if he had made any Advances, he would never have encourag'd him, because there were other Pretenders much better qualified; and yet he was not despicable, nor had I any Thoughts of opposing my Father's Will. Love had not as yet triumph'd over me; but I believe he afterwards, in Revenge, made such Havock as ensued.

Don Manuel, had not hitherto found any Opportunity to acquaint me with his Love, any otherwise than with his Eyes; for I always shunn'd him, 'till one Evening, when I was with his Sister, he came in, and being desir'd by her to sing, he threw down the Instrument she offer'd him, saying, 'How can I sing to those Charms, which rejoice all that look on them, but only me, since their Cruelty robs me of my Rest, and reduces me to Despair?' This said, he fell, or pretended to fall, into a Swoon, so that his Mother and Sister were fain to carry him to Bed; and I went away to my Apartment, I know not whether pleas'd or discontented; all I can say, is, that I was much out of Countenance, and resolv'd

never to give him an Opportunity again to be so bold.

Had I held this Resolution, I had been in the right; but Love now began to take Possession of my Heart, and gain'd Ground two Days after, when I was inform'd that Don *Manuel* was sick, and the Physicians knew not what to think of him. However, I did not see Donna *Euphrasia*, 'till the next Day, taking no Notice of what had pass'd, and pretending Business, 'till she leaving her Brother asleep, came to me, and complain'd of my Unkindness to her. I excus'd myself the best I could, and pretended Ignorance of the Trouble she was in.

After Dinner, I was oblig'd to go along with my Mother to see the sick Man; and being satisfied that my D disdain was the Cause of his Distemper, I endeavour'd to restore him to his Health, by appearing more kind, talking merrily; at which Don *Manuel*, sometimes look'd pleas'd, and sometimes discontented, whilst I observ'd him more narrowly than I was wont to do, yet always with much Caution and Reservedness. When we were to take our Leave, I came to the Bedside to comfort him, and he clapp'd a Paper into my Hand so
flyly,

flyly, that whether it was the Effect of the Surprize, or the Presence of his Mother and my own, I could not avoid concealing of it. When I came into my Chamber, I was going to tear it; but being just then call'd away, suspended the Execution 'till I was going to Bed, and then calling to the Maid that waited on me, whom I entirely lov'd, as having been brought up together, I bid her bring me the Candle to burn it.

The subtle Wench, whose Name was *Claudia*, being before corrupted by Don *Manuel*, holding away the Candle, said, 'Why, Madam; has that Paper any Thing in it against the true Faith, that you should condemn it to the Flames?' I am rather of Opinion, it only subsists by Faith in your Goodness and Compassion.' It has offended my Honour, answer'd I, 'and that is Occasion enough for it's Condemnation.' But who is ever judged without being heard, reply'd *Claudia*? 'Pray afford him a Hearing first; and then, if he deserves that Sentence, let it pass upon him; which will not fail, if he is as unfortunate as his Master.' Do you know whose it is? Said I. 'Whose can it be, answered *Claudia*, but the unhappy Don *Manuel's*, who
' for

' for your Sake languishes under Sick-
 ' nefs and Despair ; which would e're
 ' now have kill'd him, but that Death
 ' fhuns the miserable.' You have had
 a Fee, I suppose, said I, ' since you
 ' plead so zealously for him.' I am not
 corrupted, replied *Claudia*, ' But Pity,
 ' and Compassion moves me.' Why, how
 do you know, rejoin'd I, ' that all his
 ' Sufferings are for my Sake ?' I'll tell
 you, Madam, added the crafty *Claudia*,
 ' your Mother sent me this Morning to
 ' know how he did, and the poor Gentle-
 ' man was overjoy'd to see me. He told
 ' me his Sufferings, laying them all at your
 ' Door ; and this in such a tender Man-
 ' ner, that I could not forbear accompa-
 ' nying his Sighs and Tears with mine.
 ' He told me farther, that as soon as he
 ' can recover, he will be gone where you
 ' shall never more see or hear of him.'
 Thus we argued on both Sides, 'till my
 Heart began to relent ; she pressed me
 to read the Paper, I insisted to burn it ;
 but having at the same Time a Longing
 to see the Contents, was easily prevail'd
 up to open it ; which I did, engaging
 her not to let Don *Manuel* know that I
 had read it, and found it to this Effect :

The

The LETTER.

I Cannot imagine, cruel Lady, what your Heart is made of; for though it were of Stone, my Tears must have made some Impression on it by this Time; but instead of being mollify'd, it daily grows more obdurate, without any Regard to my Sufferings. Did I aim at less than making you Mistress of my Person, and all I have, your Rigour might seem excusable; but since it is your Will that I should die without Relief, I here promise to give you that Satisfaction, by absenting my self from all my Friends and you, as soon as I am able to leave my Bed; and then, perhaps, you may repent your slighting my Addresses.

This was all the Paper contain'd; but what more could it say? (God deliver us from Billets deux, which often create Love, where there was none before. Take heed, Ladies; do not trust to the ensnaring Words of Men; do not give Ear to their Expressions, nor read their deceitful Lines.) I again commanded and intreated *Claudia* not to tell *Don Manuel* I had read his Paper, and she again repeated her Promises of Obedience. This done, she went away, leaving me in such Confusion
of

of Thoughts, that I hated myself for them. One Moment I lov'd, and the next I repented; one while I was all Compassion, and then again rejected that Tenderness. At length, I came to this Conclusion, not to favour Don *Manuel* so as to encourage any future Presumption, nor yet to shew myself so scornful, as to drive him to Despair. Being thus resolv'd, I continued Donna *Euphrasia's* Friendship as before, and was as frequently in her Company as we had us'd to be. If she call'd me Sister-in-Law, I was not offend-ed; when Don *Manuel* courted me, if I did not answer fully to his Satisfaction, still I did not blame him for telling me his Love so plain; and the greatest Favour I shew'd him, was, to bid him ask me of my Father, and he might be sure of my Consent; but the Villain having other Designs, never went about it.

When the Carnival or Shrovetide came, which at *Saragoza* is celebrated with greater Mirth and Rejoicing, than in any other Part of *Spain*, we all sported and diverted ourselves, without reflecting upon one another. One of these Days, as I was going after Dinnen to Donna *Euphrasia's* Chamber, to dress myself with her for a Masquerade, her base Brother, who doubtless watch'd

watch'd this Opportunity, stopp'd me at
 his Chamber-Door, which was before his
 Mother's, bidding me welcome, as he
 us'd to do at other Times. I did not
 imagine he would attempt any farther,
 tho' he had taken the Liberty to hold me
 by the Hand; but he finding me unpro-
 vided of Defence, gave a Pull, and drew
 me into his Room, before I could make
 any resistance, locking the Door upon
 us. I know not what he did to me, for
 the Fright made me fall into a Swoon.
 (Would to God I had never more come
 to myself, but had been carry'd from the
 false Wretch's Arms to my Grave; but
 my ill Fate preserved me for greater Ca-
 lamities, if any can be greater.) About
 half an Hour after, I came to Life again,
 but my Honour was dead; which put me
 into such a Rage, that instead of venting
 my Passion, as other Women do, in
 Tears, I flung from his infamous Em-
 braces; and drawing his Sword, which
 was at the Bed's-head, was going to sheath
 it in his Body; he stepp'd aside, and
 closing with me, took away the Sword,
 which I was then going to thrust into my
 own Body, in Revenge for having miss'd
 his; saying, ' Villain, since I could not
 ' revenge myself on you, I do it on my-
 ' self;

self; for so Women of my Quality
 'right their Wrongs.' The base Man
 did all he could to appease me, for Fear
 I should kill myself; excusing his vile
 Action, by alledging he had done it to
 be sure of me; and after many kind and
 passionate Expressions, made a solemn
 Promise to marry me. At length, when
 he thought I was calmer, tho' in Effect,
 I was like an enrag'd Fury, he let me go
 back to my Chamber, so overwhelm'd
 with Sorrow, that I could scarce breathe.
 This Accident went so near to my Heart,
 that I fell sick, and was at the Point of
 Death, to the unspeakable Grief of my
 Parents.

All the Advantage Don *Manuel* gain'd
 by this Baseness, was, that as before I had
 some Liking to him, so now I hated and
 abhorr'd his very Name; and tho' *Claudia*
 press'd to know the Cause of my Sorrow,
 I never would discover it, or hear one
 Word of Don *Manuel*; and it was even
 Death to me, to see his Sister. I was so
 desperate, that I only spar'd my Life for
 the Sake of my Soul. *Claudia* guess'd at
 my Distemper, by my Sorrow; and for
 the more Surety, spoke to Don *Manuel*,
 who told her the whole Story, desiring
 her to pacify me, and repeating the Pro-
 mise

mise he had made me of being my Husband. It pleas'd Heaven I recover'd, because I had greater Evils to run thro'; and then *Claudia* being with me alone, because my Mother and the other Maids were abroad, she said to me, ' Madam, ' I do not at all wonder that you should ' grieve as you have done, and still do ; ' but we must not lay those Accidents ' which *Fortune* contrives, and Heaven ' permits, for Causes to us unknown, so ' much to Heart, as to endanger our ' Lives, and with them our Souls. I ' own Don *Manuel's* Insolence was the ' greatest that can be imagin'd ; but still ' you are more to blame, for tho' there ' was a great Hazard in this Attempt, ' yet you are no Looser ; for making him ' your Husband, all is set right again. ' If Melancholy and Despair could retrieve your Loss, you would do well to ' indulge them : It is in vain to be coy ' with him that has got your Honour ; ' for that is the Way to give him a Dislike, and make him slight you, since he ' is not so ill qualify'd, but he may gain ' any Beauty. It is therefore the wiser ' Way to seek Redress, before it is too ' late. He has this Day desir'd me to ' pacify you ; to let you know he is much ' concern'd

' concern'd at your Affliction, and that
 ' he desires you will be of good Heart,
 ' and chear up, for he is fully resolv'd to
 ' give you entire Satisfaction in all Points.
 ' All that remains, Madam, is, that you
 ' get your Parents Consent, that he may
 ' be your Husband, which will restore
 ' your Honour; for all the rest is mere
 ' Madness, and will but compleat your
 ' Ruin.'

I was sensible enough that *Claudia* gave
 me the best Advice, but was so desperate,
 that for a long Time, she could obtain no
 favourable Answer from me; and tho' I
 began to get up, yet I would not suffer
 my base Lover to see me in above two
 Months; nor did I receive any Message
 he sent me, but tore all his Papers. Whe-
 ther *Don Manuel* had then any Kindness
 for me, or whether he did it to carry on
 his false Designs, he at last acquainted his
 Sister with what he had done; for which
 she severely reprov'd him, but undertook
 to reconcile me to him. In short, *Claudia*
 and she took so much Pains, that they got
 the better of me; and as the falling out of
 Lovers, is the renewing of Love, so all
 my Hatred to *Don Manuel*, was convert-
 ed into Kindness; but at the same Time,
 his Kindness was chang'd into Hatred;

for

for when Men are once in Possession, their Affections vanish like Smoke. A whole Year pass'd away in these Follies; during all which Time, I could never prevail with Don *Manuel* to get Friends to speak to my Father, that we might be marry'd; and many other Matches that were propos'd, came to nothing. My Lover still put me off, saying, That as soon as his Majesty had granted him the Knighthood of the Order of *Santiago*, which he su'd for, the better to dispose my Father to admit him the more willingly for his Son-in-Law, he would comply with my Desires and his own. I was much troubl'd at these Delays, and they almost made me suspect all was not right; yet I was not more pressing, for fear of offending him.

About this Time, my Father having turn'd away a Servant, his Place was supply'd by a Youth, who, as I afterwards understood, was that poor Gentleman Don *Philip*, whom I had never regarded; (but whoever regards a poor Man?) he not enduring to live without seeing me, changed his Habit and his Name, to fit himself for this Employ. The first Time I saw him, I thought him to be the same Person he really was; but reflected not much, as thinking it impossible. *Lewis,*

for that he said was his Name, soon discover'd the Kindness there was between Don *Manuel* and me, but did not imagine it had gone any farther than modest Intentions tending to Wedlock; and was satisfy'd, that tho' he were known to be Don *Philip*, he could expect nothing but Scorn and Contempt, and therefore took no Notice, fearing to lose the Satisfaction of seeing me, as he did at all Times. Thus I pass'd some Months; for tho', as afterwards I found to my Cost, Don *Manuel's* Love was not real, yet he counterfeited it so well, that I knew not how to find Fault. But this could not always last, because Falsehood, sooner or later, must appear; and accordingly, by Degrees, I begun to discover a Coldness in Don *Manuel*, which made me shed many Tears; and when he ask'd me the Cause, rather than discover my Jealousy, I pretended any other Reason. In Conclusion, his Slights ran so high, that, upon Inquiry, I found out the Occasion, which I shall now relate.

Don *Manuel* had, for at least ten Years last past, kept up an Intrigue with a Lady of *Saragoza*, who was none of the handsomest, nor most virtuous; and tho' marry'd, she refus'd no Gallant, because her

Husband

Husband was good-natur'd, liv'd upon what he did not provide, and rather than spoil Sport, went abroad when there was Occasion for it. Here is a sufficient Ground to reflect upon the Men; but those mean and vile Ones, who make this their Livelihood, are rather Brutes than Men. At the same Time that *Alexandra* (so the Lady was call'd) had plung'd herself deepest in Familiarity with Don *Manuel*, it pleas'd Heaven, for a Punishment to her, or to bring about my Ruin, that she fell dangerously sick, and being near Death, made a Promise to desist from that lewd Course of Life. When recover'd, she kept her Vow a Year and a half, which was the time Don *Manuel* spent in contriving to undo me, being discarded by *Alexandra*; tho', as I afterwards understood, he still visited and presented her, for past Kindness. (A Curse on these civil Visits, which prove so fatal to many Women.) Don *Manuel* being taken up with my Courtship, forbore visiting *Alexandra*, since there was no more to be expected there. She missing him, presently guess'd he had some other Amour; and sifting out the Cause, found that Don *Manuel* was about marrying of me; which stirr'd up so much Jealousy and Envy, that

that she broke her Promise to God, court-
ed Don *Manuel* to return to her, easily
prevail'd, and fell to her lewd Course of
Life with him again, without any Regard
to her Vow. He was again charm'd by
that Enchantress, and renewing his Love
to her with greater Vigour than before,
was so assiduous at her House, that he
could not but be much miss'd at Home.
In short, neither the long Summer Days,
nor the tedious Winter Nights, had
Hours enough to afford me one; so that
I began to endure the Pains of a forsaken
Lover; and if ever my Importunities
prevail'd to gain his Company a few
Minutes, he was so indifferent and uneasy,
that it afforded me no Satisfaction, which
made me at first to fear; Fear became
Jealousy, and Jealousy led me into all
my Disasters.

There is nothing so fatal to Love, as
Jealousy; into which, when it once falls,
it scarce ever rises again; for if it takes no
Notice of Wrongs, they proceed, believ-
ing they are not known; and if it speaks
plain, then all Respect is lost, as I found
by Experience; for being no longer able
to bear with Don *Manuel's* unjust Beha-
viour, I began to unburthen my Heart,
to complain, and then to chide, which
made

made me be thought troublesome and ill-natur'd; and from one Step to another, I perceived I was hated. As yet I was ignorant of the Cause of my Misfortune; but being come to this Height of Discord, resolv'd to find out the Truth; and in Order to it, bid *Claudia* dog him, who did so one Day after Dinner, when all mine, nor his Sister's Intreaties could not prevail to keep him at Home. She follow'd him to *Alexandra's* House, and waiting to observe the Event, saw her, and other Women of her Gang, take Coach with Don *Manuel*, and drive away to a Garden out of Town. *Claudia* offended at his Falshood, went after the Coach, and discovering herself as they were going into the Garden, reprov'd him as he deserv'd, had it been well taken; but Don *Manuel*, though out of Countenance to be thus discover'd, chid and abus'd *Claudia* in a haughty Manner, which encouraged the impudent *Alexandra* to do the like; telling her all that had happen'd to me, and threatening to make it known to my Father. It is true, she did not, but still took such Liberty of coming Home to Don *Manuel*, and provoking me in the most outrageous Manner, that I never enjoy'd any Peace after.

It happen'd at this Time, that his Majesty appointed the Marquis *de los Balbaces*, Vice-Roy of *Sicily*; and Don *Manuel*, finding himself embroiled in these Controversies between *Alexandra* and me, or what is most likely, being resolv'd not to marry me, and considering the Danger he must bring himself into, he made Interest, by Means of the Marquis's Steward, who was his Friend, to be admitted to be one of his Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, without acquainting his Mother with it. This he kept so secret, that no Body knew it, but one Servant that was to go with him, 'till the Marquis was ready to set forward. Two or three Days before that, he order'd his Linnen and Cloaths to be got ready, telling us he was to go for a few Days to an Estate he had in the Country, as he had done other Times since I knew him. When the Day he was to begin his Journey came on, he took his Leave of all the Family; and drawing near to me, who was in his Apartment on purpose to bid him adieu, methought I saw more Tenderness in his Eyes than at other Times, for when he embraced me, he could not speak one Word, and the Tears ran down his Cheeks, filling me with Trouble and Suspi-

Suspicion ; yet I only thought it was some wonderful Effect of Love in my Behalf. Thus I pass'd that Day, sometimes weeping for Joy, to think he lov'd me, and sometimes for Sorrow, because he was gone.

At Night, as I sat pensive and melancholy, expecting my Mother, who was Abroad a Visiting, in came *Lewis*, that Servant I have before-mentioned, or rather *Don Philip*, that Gentleman whom Poverty had render'd unregarded, and seeing me in that Posture, said, ' Alas !
' Madam, did you know as much of your
' Misfortune, as I do, your Sorrow would
' go near to kill you.' This startled me, but I held my Peace, to hear the End of his imperfect Relation ; and he proceeded, saying, ' It is now in vain, Madam, to
' conceal yourself from me ; for though
' I have long since suspected what would
' happen, now the Case is altered ; for
' I know the whole Truth.' Are you mad, *Lewis*, answered I. ' I am not
' replied *Lewis*, tho' I have Cause enough
' to be so ; for I bear you so much Love,
' (as my Mistress) that what I have
' learned this Day, is enough to distract
' or kill me ; and since it is not fit to
' conceal any Thing from you, know that

‘ the false *Don Manuel* is going to *Si-*
 ‘ *cily* with the Marquis, as one of his
 ‘ Gentlemen. His own Servant has told
 ‘ me, he does it only to avoid doing you
 ‘ Justice ; and besides, I saw him set out
 ‘ myself this Afternoon. Do you con-
 ‘ sider what you will have done in this
 ‘ Case, for upon the Word of an honest
 ‘ Man, (and I am something better than
 ‘ you imagine) if it is your Pleasure, tho’
 ‘ it cost me my Life, he shall be as good
 ‘ as his Word to you, or he shall die
 ‘ for it.’ I dissembled the best I could,
 and said, ‘ Why, who are you, that
 ‘ could perform what you promise, if
 ‘ all you say were true? Do you give
 ‘ me leave, replied *Lewis*, and when it
 ‘ is done, you shall know that.’ By this
 I was fully satisfied of what I had before
 only suspected, that he was *Don Philip*,
 as appear’d by his Mein ; and being a-
 bout to answer him, my Mother came
 in, which put an End to our Discourse.
 I got from her as fast as I could, and
 going into my Chamber, threw myself
 on the Bed, almost distracted with Trou-
 ble, sometimes resolving to kill myself,
 and then again to destroy him that was
 the Cause of my Death.

At last I chose the worst Course, for both those were heroick, but this last perfected my Ruin. I got up immediately, with an undaunted Courage, and packing up my own and my Mother's Jewels, with as much Gold as I could conveniently carry, (for all was in my Custody) waited 'till my Father came in to Supper; when being call'd, I excus'd myself, alledging I was not well, and would afterwards take some light Collation. They sat down to Supper, and I finding a fit Opportunity to put my Folly in Execution, all the Servants then waiting at Table, slipp'd away into the Street, without acquainting so much as my trusty Maid, *Claudia*.

Not far from us lived the Servant I said my Father had turned away when he took *Lewis*, whose House I knew, because pitying his Want and Age, I us'd to relieve, and to call and see him, when I went abroad without my Mother. Thither I went, and the honest Man received me with much Concern for my Misfortune, which he knew something of, because I had promised, that, as soon as married, I would take him home.

Octavio, (so he was called) blamed my Resolution; but finding there was no Re-

medy, he submitted, and the sooner, because he saw I had Money, and gave him Part.

There I staid that Night, full of Sorrow and Fear; and in the Morning bid him go to my House, without taking Notice of any Thing, and tell *Claudia*, he wanted to speak with me, as he did at other Times; and by that Means, see how Things went, and whether any Search was made after me.

Ostasio coming to my unfortunate House, saw all the People of the Town going in and out, which much surprized him; but going in among the rest, he found *Claudia* all in Tears, who told him, That as soon as Supper was done, my Mother went into my Room to see what ailed me, and missing me, enquired of the Servants, who said, they had left me upon the Bed. That having then found the Back-door open, and the Jewels being missing, they easily guess'd how it was, and my Mother began to cry out. My Father coming in at the Noise, and being told the Occasion, dropp'd down backwards, Grief and Vexation sinking his aged Body; and whether it was the Fall, or the Concern, that kill'd him, is not known, but he never spoke a Word more.

She

She added, That my Mother was not like to be long behind him. Which Disasters consider'd, little Notice was taken of mine, unless it were to condemn my Folly: That my Mother knew the whole affair of Don *Manuel*, because, as soon as I turn'd my back, every Body told what they knew, and therefore she had order'd, that no Search should be made after me, saying, That since I had chosen a Husband to my own Mind, she wish'd me better Fortune with him, than I had brought to the Family.

Octavio brought me this News, which redoubled all my Sorrows, especially when he told me, that I was now become the Town-Talk. It was some Comfort to me to hear there was no Search made after me; and having sew'd up my Jewels, and some Pieces of Gold, so as they might not be found, and provided all Things for our Journey, four or five Days after, *Octavio* and I set out for *Alicant*, where my false Lover was to embark. The Gallies were not arriv'd when we came thither, and we took a Lodging, 'till we could contrive how my base Lover should see me. *Octavio* went every Day to the House where the Marquis lay, saw the treacherous Don *Manuel*, and told me all that happen'd,

and among the rest, that the Steward was looking out for a Woman-Slave; and tho' several had been brought to him, he lik'd none of them. As soon as I heard it, I resolv'd upon another Piece of Madness, greater than all the former, which was, that I counterfeited a Brand on my Face, and putting myself into a proper Habit, to look like a *Moorish* Slave, by the Name of *Zelima*, I bid *Octavio* carry me to the Steward, and if he lik'd me, never to stand for the Price.

Octavio was much troubl'd at my Resolution, and shed Tears for me; but I comforted him, saying, that Disguise would serve to promote my Designs, to reduce *Don Manuel* to my Will, and to get out of *Spain*, that I might observe his Actions. This was some Satisfaction to *Octavio*, and much more, when I told him he should have the Money I was sold for, only desiring he would write me Word into *Sicily*, what became of my Mother. Every Thing succeeded as I had order'd; I was sold for an hundred Crowns, and became a Slave, not so much to those who had paid for me, as to my false Lover, for whose Sake I deliver'd myself into Captivity. Having satisfy'd *Octavio* with the Money he had for me, and more
of

of my own, he took his Leave to return Home, with much Sorrow for me, and I stay'd with my new Masters. I know not whether I was joyful or uneasy, but prov'd fortunate in their Kindness; for I took such Care to please, that in a few Days all Things were at my Disposal. My Mistress was young and good-natur'd, and I was belov'd by her, and the other Maids, as if I had been their own Daughter or Sister; but more particularly by one of them call'd *Leonisa*, who was so very fond of me, that I lay in her Bed.

The first Time Don *Manuel* saw me, was one Day he din'd with my Master, which, tho' he often did, yet he had not the Opportunity of observing me before, because I was in the Kitchen; but that Day I carry'd a Dish to the Table. He cast his Eyes upon me; and tho' the Brand in my Face could not but make him doubt, being so well imitated, that no Body could mistrust it, yet in that Suspence he forgot to eat, admiring what he beheld; for on the one Hand he concluded I was the very Person, and on the other could scarce be perswaded I had been guilty of such a Madness, as not knowing the Misfortunes of my unhappy Family for his Sake. I was no less astonish'd

nish'd at another Accident, which was, that turning short from him, that he might not have Leisure quite to undeceive himself, and looking upon the Servants that waited, I saw *Lewis*, who had been before at my Father's. This startled me, and I perceiv'd that *Lewis* was no less amaz'd to see me in that Habit, than *Don Manuel*, and having my Picture in his Heart, knew me at first Sight, notwithstanding the counterfeit Brand. As I went out, I heard *Don Manuel* ask my Master whether I was the Slave he had lately bought? My Mistress said, ' This
 ' is she, and is so pretty and good-hu-
 ' mour'd, that it grieves me to the Heart
 ' to think she is a *Moor*, and I would
 ' give double what she cost me, that she
 ' would be a Christian; besides, I am
 ' vex'd to see that delicate Face branded,
 ' and I cannot forbear cursing those who
 ' did it.' *Leonisa*, who was by, answer'd,
 ' She says she did it herself, for Vexation
 ' that she was wrong'd, and she has pro-
 ' mis'd me that she will be a Christian.
 ' Nothing could have persuaded me, re-
 ' ply'd *Don Manuel*, that she was not a
 ' Beauty I knew at *Saragoza*, but that
 ' Brand: However, Nature might per-
 ' haps cast this *Moor* in the same Mould.'

I being

I being concern'd at the Sight of *Lewis*, ask'd one of the Servants what Youth that was, who serv'd at the Table among the rest. ' It is, said he, a Servant Don *Manuel* has hir'd this very Day, because his Man has kill'd another, and is fled for it. I knew him, said I, in a House where I serv'd, and should be glad to speak to him, for I love to see old Acquaintance. He will come to Dinner with us presently, answer'd the other, and then you may talk to him.' After the Masters had din'd, the Servants came out, and I could not but smile, to observe how much *Lewis* was amaz'd to see me, and to hear them call me *Zelima*; not that he did not know me, but admiring to what a vile Condition Love had reduc'd me. When they had din'd, I took *Lewis* aside, and said, ' What Fate has brought you hither? The same that brings you, Madam, answer'd he; Love, and meeting with a bad Return, and the Hopes of finding and revenging you, as soon as an Opportunity offers. Take no Notice, said I, but call me *Zelima*; for it is no Time as yet to talk of any Revenge, but what Love takes on me. I have own'd I knew you in a House where I serv'd; and do not you tell your Master

‘ that you know, or have spoken to me,
 ‘ for I trust in you more than in him.
 ‘ You may safely, reply’d *Lewis*; for if
 ‘ he lov’d and honour’d you as I do, you
 ‘ would not be in the Condition you are,
 ‘ or the Cause of all the Disasters that
 ‘ have happen’d. I believe you, said I;
 ‘ but tell me what brought you hither? I
 ‘ came, answer’d he, to seek you, and to
 ‘ kill him that is the Occasion of your
 ‘ doing as you have done, for that is my
 ‘ Design in serving him. Do not think
 ‘ of that, reply’d I, for it will ruin me
 ‘ for ever; for tho’ *Don Manuel* is false
 ‘ and base, yet my Life depends on his,
 ‘ because I propose to recover my lost
 ‘ Honour, and his Death will put a Peri-
 ‘ od to my Life; for should you kill him,
 ‘ I would not survive.’ Next I enquir’d
 of him about my Mother and Family,
 and he told me, she was returning to
Murcia with my Father’s Body; that she
 was something comforted, believing I was
 gone with *Don Manuel*, and that he was
 my Husband; adding, that, for his own
 Part, he knew *Don Manuel* fled from me,
 and therefore came after, resolving, if he
 did not do me Right, as became a Gentle-
 man, to kill him, whatsoever became of
 himself; thanking me for the Confidence

I re-

I reposed in him. With this I took Leave, fearing any Notice should be taken of us, bidding him, if he wanted for any Thing, to let me know it, for I had still Money. I gave him a Pistole for the present, and, to say the Truth, never liked him so well as at that Time, perceiving such a generous Disposition in him, and being pleased that I had some Body to stand by me.

Some Days passed before the Gallies arrived; during which Time, my Mistress being abroad with her Maids, and I left alone at home, Don *Manuel*, who had a Mind to be satisfied of what he mistrusted, came to look for my Master, or rather for me; and finding me, with a great deal of Indifferency, said, ‘ What is the
 ‘ Meaning of this Disguise, Donna *Isa-*
 ‘ *bel*? How can a Woman of your
 ‘ Quality, who had Thoughts of being
 ‘ my Wife, stoop to such a mean Action;
 ‘ which is such, that if ever I had any
 ‘ Thoughts of being your Husband, I
 ‘ have now quite laid them aside, you
 ‘ are are so far disgraced in my Opinion,
 ‘ and in the Sight of all the World?
 ‘ Perfidious vile Man, said I, you ought
 ‘ to blush at my Name, since you are
 ‘ the Cause of that Meanness you upbraid
 ‘ me

‘ me with ; nor is this all, your Villan-
 ‘ nies are the Occasion of my noble Fa-
 ‘ ther’s Death, whom Heaven has taken
 ‘ away, that it may itself avenge my
 ‘ Wrongs, without giving him the Trou-
 ‘ ble. I am *Zelima*, and not *Donna Isabel* ; a
 ‘ Slave, and not a Lady ; and a *Moor*, since
 ‘ I harbour in my Breast such an Infidel
 ‘ as you ; for he who breaks his Promise
 ‘ made to God of being my Husband,
 ‘ is neither a Christian or a Gentleman,
 ‘ but an infamous Villain. You have
 ‘ branded not only my Face, but my Re-
 ‘ putation. Do as you will, for if you
 ‘ want the Will to make me your Wife,
 ‘ there is a God in Heaven, and a King
 ‘ on Earth, to do me Right ; and should
 ‘ they fail, still there are Ponyards and
 ‘ Daggers, and I have Hands and Heart
 ‘ enough to kill you, that Ladies may
 ‘ learn of me to chastise perfidious vile
 ‘ Men. Be gone out of my Sight, lest
 ‘ I perform what I have said.’

He perceived I was in such a Passion,
 that fearing I might commit some Ex-
 travagancy, or else thinking he had not
 wrong’d me enough, and resolving to pro-
 ceed, he began to appease me with abun-
 dance of fair Words and Promises, which
 at first I would not give Ear to. At last
 he

he prevailed, for Love overcame, and I believ'd, so that we were reconcil'd; I gave him an Account of all that had befallen me'till then, and he desired I would continue as I was'till we were in *Sicily*; where he would find Means to set all right. Thus we parted; I was well pleased, and thought this a good-Beginning, though I could not much rely upon him.

The Galleys came, we embarked, and Don *Manuel* aboard the same Galley I was in, with my Master and Mistress, to my great Satisfaction, and no less Trouble to *Lewis*, who was grieved, because he could hope for no Favour from me; which farther convinced me, that he was Don *Philip*, though I would not take Notice of it, for fear of making him too bold. We arriv'd in *Sicily*, and were all lodged in the Palace, where some Months passed, before I would press Don *Manuel*, who began then to kill me with Indifference and Slights; insomuch, that he would scarce look upon me, for he was fallen into other Womens Company, and in short did not love me; so that I was continually in Tears, and could not conceal them from *Leonisa*, my Mistress's Woman, with whom I said I had con-

I

tracted

tracted such Friendship; who being told, under a Promise of Secrecy, all my Misfortunes was beside herself with Astonishment.

My Mistress loved me so well, that I could scarce ask any Thing of her, but she granted; and therefore, that I might have the Opportunity of talking to Don *Manuel*, without any Let, I asked Leave of her to go one Evening to eat a Collation with *Leonisa* upon the Strand. It was granted, and I desired *Lewis* to tell his Master, that some Ladies expected him there, but not to say I was one of them, for fear he should not go. We went and hired a Boat to carry us over to a small Island, three or four Miles distant.

Don *Manuel* and *Lewis* came, the former dissembling his Displeasure, when he knew me, and applauding the Trick I had put upon him, We went out upon the Island, leaving the Watermen in the Boat, to carry us off again, when it was Time. Being seated under the shady Trees, and discoursing about the Cause that brought us thither, I complaining, and Don *Manuel* giving deceitful Excuses, we were on a sudden set upon and seized, before Don *Manuel* and *Lewis* could make any

any Defence, or we run away, by a Number of *Moors*, who had lain concealed in a small Galliot in a Creek hard by, where they were watching for some Prize. They carried us aboard their Vessel, and immediately put to Sea ; so that I was now not only a Slave to my Lover, but to the *Moors*, tho' it was some Comfort to me, to see him with me. The Watermen of our Boat, seeing what had happened, fled back, with all possible Speed, to carry the News.

The Captain of the Pyrates, who spoke good *Spanish*, seeing my Face branded, asked, Who I was ? I answered, I was a *Mabometan*, and my Name *Zelima*, and had been taken six Years before ; that I was born at *Fez*, and that Gentleman my Master's Son, and the other his Servant, and the Maiden a Servant in our Family ; desiring him to use them well, for their Parents would redeem them, as soon as they knew the Price ; which I said, relying on the Jewels and Gold I had about me, speaking aloud, that they might hear me and say the same. The Captain was pleased with his Prize, and for having delivered me, whom he took for a *Mabometan*, and accordingly treated us very well.

When

When we came to *Algier*, he delivered us to a beautiful young Daughter he had, called *Zaida*, who was well pleased with me, for being a *Moor*; but much better with Don *Manuel*, for she fell in Love with him. She dressed me as you see, and would have had Means used to take out the Brand on my Face; which I refused, saying, I had put it on for my own Pleasure, and would not part with it. *Zaida* was very fond of me, both because I endeavoured to oblige her in all Things, and hoping I might induce Don *Manuel* to love her. I did what I pleased in the House, as if it had been my own; and for my Sake Don *Manuel*, *Lewis*, and *Leonisa* were well used, and went where they would, I having bid Don *Manuel* agree for their Ransom, and I would furnish him with the Value; which he seemed to be thankful for, but only knew not how I should get away, no Ransom being to be taken for me, as supposing me to be a *Mahometan*; however, we expected, 'till the Fryars that go over every Year to redeem Captives came. In the mean while *Zaida* acquainted me with her Passion, desiring me to speak to Don *Manuel*, and to let him know, that, if he would turn *Mahometan*,
 she

she would marry him, and make him Master of her Father's great Wealth.

This was a new Torment to me, and almost reduced me to Despair. She gave me Opportunity to talk to him at Leisure. For a long Time I said nothing to him of the *Moor's* Affection, for Fear of his inconstant Temper, returning her Answers of my own framing; 'till at last, Jealousy prevailing, (for by his Looks I perceived he loved the *Moor*) I acquainted him with *Zaida's* Love. After reproving me for my Jealousy, he said, he thought it best to hold her in Hand; and therefore I might tell her, that he would not forsake his Religion, tho' it cost him his Life; but if she would go away with him to a Christian Country, and become a Christian herself, he would promise to marry her; bidding me to advise, and encourage her to it by all possible Means; and if once he got away, he would do me Right.

To be short, *Zaida* consented, especially when I told her I would go too, and so it was agreed we should make our Escape two Months after, when her Father went to a Country-House he had. It seems Heaven was disposing Affairs to bring about my Revenge; for when
the

the *Moor* was gone, *Zaida* counterfeited a Letter from her Father, to call her to his Country-House, because he was sick, that the King might give her Leave to go: Having obtained it, she fitted a good Galliot, filled with Christian Slaves to row, giving them Notice very privately of the Design. To this Galliot she conveyed all her Jewels, Money, and every Thing that was precious, and might be carried off without being much observ'd. She took along with her me, *Leonisa*, and two other Christian Slaves, but never a Moor; as also Don *Manuel*, and *Lewis*; and thus we made away for *Cartagena* or *Alicant*, which of the two we could reach. Here my Pains and Sorrows were redoubled; for there being nothing to obstruct, and *Zaida* fully perswaded that Don *Manuel* would marry her, she refused him no Favour. Sometimes I saw Don *Manuel* take her by the Hands, and other whiles she clasped her Arms about his Neck, and kissed him; for the false Wretch loved her, and sought all Opportunities of enjoying, but that I always disturbed their proceeding so far. I was sensible my Watchfulness was not pleasing to them, but they were fain to bear with it; and if sometimes I happened to give the Infidel
a Check,

a Check, he presently stopt my Mouth, saying, he could not then help it; that he had run thro' Dangers enough for my Folly and Madnes; that I must have Patience 'till we come to *Saragoza*, and all would be well.

To conclude, we arrived safe at *Cartagena*, landed and discharged the Christian Captives, giving them wherewithal to go to their homes. We set out from thence for *Saragoza*, with little Satisfaction to *Zaida*, who, as soon as she came ashore, would willingly have been baptized and married, she was so much in Love with her imagin'd Husband, but I obstructed it. Coming to *Saragoza*, six Years after we left it, Don *Manuel* found his Mother was dead, and his Sister *Euphrasia* a Widow, having been married to the Cousin she expected from the *West-Indies*, who was killed in the Wars, leaving her a Son. Donna *Euphrasia* received us with abundance of Joy and Astonishment at our Adventures, which we told her during three Days we took to rest us after our Fatigues, she being much amazed at the Brand of my Face, which I had not yet taken off, because of *Zaida*; but I told her it was counterfeit, and that I only continued it 'till my Affairs were brought

a happy Issue. *Zaida* was so impatient to be baptized and married, that it obliged me one Evening to send for Don *Manuel*, and in the Presence of his Sister, *Zaida*, all the Family, and *Lewis*, (who was then very watchful) said to him,

‘ Since it has pleased Heaven, Don *Manuel*, to put an End to our many Troubles, bringing you home safe to your House, and as it has been the Will of God, that I should bear you Company in them all ; that being sensible of my Constancy and Love, you may requite them. It is now Time to give over all Dissimulation and Disguise, and to let *Zaida* and all the World know, that only your Person can be a sufficient Recompence for what you owe me ; and that you alone can take off the Brand that is on my Face, when you have removed the Stain that lies upon my Honour. It is not fit that my Satisfaction and Happiness be any longer delay’d, that those who have been acquainted with my Shame and Disasters, may be Witnesses of my Restoration and good Fortune. You have often promised you would be mine ; and it is not reasonable I should continue uneasy, when another thinks

‘ you

‘ you her own. You know my Quality
 ‘ is considerable ; I have a good Estate ;
 ‘ my Beauty the same you courted and
 ‘ and sigh’d after ; my Love is well
 ‘ known to you ; what I have done for
 ‘ your Sake, is even to Madness ; you
 ‘ are rather a Gainer than a Loser, in
 ‘ every Respect ; and as hitherto I have
 ‘ been your Slave, under a counterfeit
 ‘ Brand, for the future, I will be so in
 ‘ all Reality. Do you now declare how
 ‘ you will have Things ordered, that my
 ‘ Desires may have the deserv’d Success.
 ‘ Do not keep me any longer in Pain,
 ‘ since (in Justice) I deserve the Reward
 ‘ of the Sufferings I have gone thro’ for
 ‘ your Sake.’

The Villain would not permit me to
 proceed, for smiling in a scornful Man-
 ner, he answer’d, ‘ Why should you
 ‘ fancy, Donna *Isabel*, that I am not sen-
 ‘ sible of all you have said ? I must tell
 ‘ you, I am so to such a Degree, that those
 ‘ very Things you think to gain me by,
 ‘ have so far offended me, that if ever I
 ‘ had any Kindness for you, it is now so
 ‘ far gone, as not to bear even the Me-
 ‘ mory of it. I am no Stranger to your
 ‘ Quality, or your Kindness ; but where
 ‘ there is no Love, all that stands for
 ‘ nothing.

‘ nothing. You might be satisfied, since
 ‘ I fled from you out of this City, that
 ‘ I would not have you for my Wife;
 ‘ and if I was so averse to it then, how
 ‘ much more do you think I should be
 ‘ so now, when you have followed me
 ‘ like a mean Woman, through so many
 ‘ vile and base Employments? You might
 ‘ have known as much as I now tell you,
 ‘ long ago; and as for the Promise you
 ‘ say I made you, we Men give the same
 ‘ at any Time, to compass our Designs;
 ‘ and Women might be acquainted with
 ‘ with them, and have taken warning
 ‘ long since. In short, I look upon that
 ‘ as no Obligation; for if ever I made
 ‘ such Promise, it was done without any
 ‘ Design of fulfilling it, and only to appease
 ‘ your Anger. I have never deceived
 ‘ you, for you might very well
 ‘ be sensible, that the Delays I always
 ‘ sought, were not for want of Opportunity,
 ‘ but because I never designed
 ‘ any such Thing. It is you that have
 ‘ deceived yourself, by running after, and
 ‘ never suffering me to rest in any Place.
 ‘ And to the End you may give over
 ‘ following and disturbing me, and go
 ‘ home to your Mother, to get you a
 ‘ Husband that is not so nice as I,
 ‘ (for

(for I can never trust a Woman that has so many Wiles and Disguises). I must tell you, that *Zaida* is beautiful, rich, and loves me, and I her, and therefore I here give her my Hand to be her Husband, as soon as all Things can be provided for baptizing of her; that so you may cease being a Plague to me, and I enduring of it.'

You may imagine what a Rage I was in at these Words of the false Don *Manuel*; but being about to return an Answer, *Lewis*, who, as soon as Don *Manuel* begun to speak, had made up close by him, drew his Sword, and said, 'Base and unworthy Man, is that the Return you make for the Obligation you owe an Angel!' Then perceiving that Don *Manuel* started up, and laid his Hand to his Sword, he made such a Pass at him, that he run him quite through the Body, so that he dropt down dead, without speaking one Word. This done, *Lewis* stept to the Door, saying, 'Now, beautiful Donna *Isabel*, Don *Philip* has revenged the Wrongs done you by Don *Manuel*; farewell, for if I escape this Danger, I will find you out.' And so saying, in a Moment got into the Street. It is needless to mention what a Confusion there

D

was

was, upon such an Accident ; some of the Maids ran to the Windows crying out, others went to assist *Euphrasia*, who had fainted away, so that no Body regarded *Zaida*, who having always had *Spanish* Slaves, understood the Language very well. She knowing all that was said, and seeing *Don Manuel* dead, threw herself upon his Body ; and being distracted with Grief for the Loss of him, drew his Dagger, and, before any one could come to prevent her, stuck it to her Heart, and expired upon him. I being now more accustomed to Misfortunes, (tho' troubled at this Disaster) yet pleased that I had my Revenge, left them all in that Disorder ; and, before the Neighbours could come in, went to my Chamber, and taking up all *Zaida's* Jewels I had in my Custody, slipped away ; one Thing, to prevent being secured, and discovering who *Don Philip* was ; and another, to endeavour to find him, that we might both escape together ; but I could not hear of him.

Though I had been so long from *Saragoza*, I went directly to *Ostasio's* House, who received me with more Astonishment than at the first Time I went to him ; and having told him my Fortunes, rested there that Night, I know not whether

merry

merry or sad ; for, on the one Hand, Don *Manuel's* miserable End grieved me, as having not yet had Leisure to hate him ; and on the other Side, I was so incensed at his Baseness to me, looking on him as *Zaida's*, and not mine, that it comforted me ; however, I could not but be concerned for Don *Philip's* Danger, because he had so far exposed himself to retrieve my lost Reputation. These Things filled me full of Anguish. The next Day, *Ostasio* went abroad to learn how Affairs stood, and was informed, that Don *Manuel* had been buried like a Christian, and *Zaida* like a desperate Infidel ; and that there was a Proclamation out against Don *Philip* and me, threatening any with severe Punishment that should conceal us. This obliged me to lie close for a Fortnight, 'till the Search was over ; which Time being expired, I prevailed with *Ostasio* to go with me to *Valencia*, where in more Safety I would acquaint him with my Resolution. *Ostasio* was always a Gainer by my Disasters, and therefore he readily consented ; so that we came safe to *Valencia*, where we continued three or four Days, before I could conclude how to dispose of myself. Sometimes I resolved to go into a Monastery, 'till I

D 2

could

could hear News of Don *Philip*, to whom I was so much obliged, and hoped with the Jewels I had, to make his Peace, and marry him; but then I dreaded, that having been once unfortunate, I could never more expect to be happy: Then again, I decreed to go to *Murcia* to my Mother, and was checked, by thinking how I could presume to appear before her, having been the Occasion of my Father's Death, and of all her Sorrows. At length, I resolved to continue for ever as I began, that is, to be a branded Slave; and accordingly, packing up my Jewels so as I might continually carry them about me, and making a Bundle of this Suit, that it might look like a poor Slave's Apparel, I requited *Octavio* for his Pains, and bid him carry me out into the Market, and there sell me to any Body, without regarding the Price. He used all his Endeavours to dissuade me from this Design; but perceiving all he could say, was in vain, he did as I directed; and one of the first that came to bid for me, was my present Lady's Uncle, who taking a Liking, gave an hundred Ducats for me, which I bestowed on *Octavio*, who left me with Tears in his Eyes, seeing me lost to all Hopes of Happiness, since I still contrived

trived my own Trouble. My Master carried me Home, and delivered me to his Lady, who was not well pleased with me, because she knew her Husband to be wantonly given, and feared I might prove as bad as others. However, in a few Days, perceiving how modestly and gravely I behaved myself, she took a Kindness to me, especially after I informed her that my Master made Love to me, desiring she would find some Way to prevent it for the future. She could think of none so safe, as removing me out of his Way; and accordingly sent me to *Madrid*, to wait upon this Lady; whither I came with much Satisfaction, being informed of her excellent Temper, who may well credit me in this Particular, since, to satisfy her Curiosity, I have given this full Relation of all my Life, as she has often desired, seeing me shed Tears, and wondering at the Cause of it, which is the same I have now exposed in my long and dismal Story.

Now, Gentlemen, continued the beautiful Donna *Isabel*, since my Wrongs may serve as a Warning to all Ladies, it is but Reason that I do not suffer myself to be any longer deluded, but hoping to live 'till *Fortune* becomes more favourable

to

to me; for now Don *Manuel* cannot return to Life, or if he could, would I trust him, or any other Man; for I look upon them all as false and deceitful towards the Women; and what I most admire at, is, that neither the Men of Birth, nor the Wise, nor the Grave, nor the better Sort, treat them any better than the meanest and most despicable Clowns; being wholly bent upon railing at, undervaluing, and deceiving them; believing this is no lessening to themselves, whereas in Reality, it is the greatest that can be; for the weaker the Women are, the more they ought to be supported and defended by the Men. I do not deny, but there are abundance of Women, whose Vices and Miscarriages have given Men sufficient Occasion to undervalue them as they do, yet they ought not to treat all Women alike; for as there are abundance bad, so there are very many virtuous, and consequently, that deserve Praise and Honour. I am satisfied there are some Men so perverse, that they will ask, where the good and virtuous Women are? since there is much Scandal at present to be found even among the highest Rank. I answer, that such Ladies are rather Monsters, than Women; and I am apt to believe

believe they are much fewer than is generally supposed, because many infamous Wretches use the Names of great Persons, where they are not known, and imposing upon ambitious and conceited Men, bring that Scandal upon the most unspotted Reputations. But be it as it will, they ought still to distinguish, to pick the Ore from the Dross, and to separate the Gold from the Lead, and not, upon the first Hint or Surmise, to conclude the Ladies guilty of any Failing; whereas now the better Sort, and greatest Quality, grow as loose in this Particular, as the vilest Rabble. Do you think this is becoming in the Mouths of Gentlemen, whose Duty is to defend and protect the female Sex? But now Gentility is a mere empty Name, only to raise human Vanity, and to make Men more proud and vicious. What is the Reason, do you think, that there is so little Courage among the Men, that they are gallanting it at Home, when their King is in the Field? It is the little Value they put upon the Women; for if you regarded them as formerly Men did, you would all of you expose your Lives, rather than hazard their falling into the Hands of your Enemies. But I have said too much, since I
have

have no more to do with the Men, and value not whether they are sincere or false, being resolved, with my Lady's Leave, to secure me a heavenly Spouse, by retiring into a Monastery, where I may end my Days in Peace, and provide for a future State.

F I N I S.





IBERIAN NOVELS.

BOOK the First.



ON *Alonso de Castilla Sover-*
cano, one of the most cele-
brated Wits of *Spain*, very
aptly compares a Courtezan,
or Public Lady of Pleasure,
to a Pole-Cat. This little Quadruped,
or four-footed Animal, is, if we may be-
lieve the Philosophers, says he, a Crea-
ture naturally given to Theft, and never
stirs out but in the Night-time. She is
somewhat bigger than a Ferret, extream-
ly Nimble and Cunning: Her Prey is
Hollow-bits, where-ever she fixes her
Rendezvous, no Wall is too high, nor any

B

Door

Door secure enough to prevent her coming at the Poultry : Her Agility is surprizing, she leaps, flies, clings, hangs an end, and can screw herself in, thro' the least Hole imaginable.

Our Author has called the Heroine of this Work the *Pole-Cat* of *Seville*, because she was born with the very same Inclinations ; endued with the same Cunning and Nimbleness (of Fingers), not meanly stockt with Assurance and mischievous Artifice : And descended from Parents of the same laudable Genius. Were a Purse ever so well hid, or a Treasure ever so privately concealed ; it was impossible for it to escape the Master-key of her Plots and Contrivances. She had been bred up from a Child in all Manner of Liberty ; for her Parents, who ought to have corrected her ill Habits, were themselves addicted to all Sorts of Vice.

Let this Description of those who may resemble our *Pole-Cat*, serve for an Example to the Reader ; to the Intent that if he is easy to be cullied, he may look to himself ; if he is inclined to Evil, he may dread the Punishment that attends it ; and if he is careless of his Honour, he may be put in mind of his Duty : For the Facts which I now write, are no Fictions, but



but what really have happened in one of the most considerable Cities in *Spain* : but tho' they were not true, yet as the like do daily come to pass in the Age we now live in, I am perswaded the Caution which I recommend will not be useless to those who shall put it in practice.

Signor Trapassa, our Heroine's Father, had been condemned to the Gallies for honouring himself with the Order of a Knight of Christ, without having performed the necessary Probations, on which his Majesty confers it; which he did, that he might have a better opportunity of playing his Pranks in the Train of the Court, where he past for a Knight, and of exercising under that Cloak those clean *Legerdemaineries*, wherein the most Expert might have been his Scholars. A Woman with whom he kept Company, enraged against him for a certain Jealousy she had entertained, and what she found to be well-grounded, accused him of this Forgery, which was the Cause of his being promoted by the King to the worthy Office of Oar-tugger on Board his Majesty's Gallies. There he spent all the time allotted by his Sentence, and something more. He was ordered on Board the Squadron which is called the *Spanish*,

and conducted from *Toledo* to *Port Saint Mary's*, with all his Companions. He was bloodily vexed at having failed in a Design he had formed of making his escape by filing off his Shackles, and at finding that the discovery of that Attempt had encreased the ill Treatment he received. So soon as *Eslefania* (this was the Name of the Mistress that had done him this good turn) was informed, that he was gone to execute his new Employment, though she was of no very merciful Disposition, she began to repent of her having occasioned his misfortune ; and concluded that she could not make any better Reparation for the Injury she had done him by chaining him thus to the Oar, than by voluntarily binding herself to him in the Fetters of Matrimony, as soon as the time of his Condemnation should be expired ; what engaged her still more potently to the Execution of this design, was, that she already had a Daughter by him, who is the Person I describe, and who is the subject of this Book. In this Resolution she left the Court, to go to *Seville* ; hoping in that great and famous City, she might sooner have News of the Man she had made so wretched, and whom she now wished to see Released.

Esle.

Estefania was very easy in her Circumstances : A *Genoeze*, whose Widow she was, had left her in a very plentiful Condition. The great Costliness of her Dress, and the magnificent Furniture of her House, gave her at *Madrid* the repute of being a Woman of Quality : But she soon fell from the Fame she had acquired, when People came to know the History of her Life, and that by an Excess of Jealousy, she had thrown into the Gallies a rascally Fellow, who had been her Gallant : Her best Friends were the first to rail at her, finding she had been so Base-minded as to love a Scoundrel who deserved nothing but the Gallows. All these Reasons obliged her to leave *Madrid*, and go to *Seville* ; but before she went, she made up into Bales all the most valuable of her Effects to be carried with her ; and sold all the rest that were unfit for Carriage, whereby she raised a considerable Sum of Money. Having thus settled her Affairs, she took a place in the Coach, with two Servant-maids, and arrived at that celebrated Town, the Depository of all the Riches of the West : There she settled herself for the time which *Trapassa* was obliged to serve in the Gallies ; which being at last expired (for she kept an exact

Account of it) she heard that the *Spanish* Gallies were arrived at Port *Saint Mary's*: Upon this she went thither, not in the same Pomp that she had lived at *Seville*, but in a more modest Garb; concealing herself thus, that she might not afterwards be upbraided that she was the Wife of a Gally-slave, or at least that she had taken the pains to go herself on purpose to fetch him out of his Confinement.

She was immediately informed that her Spark was one of the Crew of the *Admiral* Gally, very Brisk and Jolly, employ'd in the Office of *Espalier*, a Preheminence among the Slaves which exempts them from Rowing, which he had obtained of the Admiral by his jovial Temper; but though he had been so lucky as to get that Office, he was so used to the Gallies, that he would not much have troubled his Head about getting his Freedom. But *Estefania's* Arrival remedied all those Matters. She set herself instantly to treat for his Liberty, applying herself to those in whose Breast the thing lay, and working upon them even by Money, unknown to *Trapassa*, whom she had not yet seen; so that he was in a strange surprize, when he was told that there were certain Persons, not only soliciting his

Dis-

Discharge, but sparing no Money to obtain it; and it never came into his thoughts that his *Estefania* could have changed her Cruelty into such a sweet obliging Temper. All things being concluded and agreed upon for *Trapassa's* Liberty; he was unburthened of his Chain, and told that he might go where he pleased; tho' he could not yet find out who had procured him this Happiness, which was no small one; for even when the Gally-slaves have compleated the time of their Condemnation, there is always some Objection started against their being discharged: And many a Wretch who is condemned but for four or five Years, serves six or seven. *Trapassa* was hugely amazed to see himself in the presence of his *Estefania*, and to hear, that it was by her sole Means he had recovered his Freedom: She met him with open Arms; and he, not to appear ungrateful, repay'd with the same Caresses so obliging a Reception; and the Kindness she had now done him, utterly effaced his Resentment of the Hardships she had made him undergo. He was uneasy at seeing her in an Equipage so different from that wherein he had left her at *Madrid*; for he was Ignorant, that it was out of Cunning she had disguised herself

in that manner ; neither could she at that time inform him, because of the Presence of those who had brought him, and whom she was obliged to treat at Dinner upon that Occasion. After having made them as welcome as she was able ; every one retired Home, and *Trapassa* remained in the Inn with his Mistress : Seeing themselves alone, they renewed their Caresses, and gave mutual Testimonies of the pleasure they took to see one another again after so long an Absence. *Trapassa* returned her Thanks with all imaginable Signs of Acknowledgment, for her Trouble and Goodness in delivering him from the cruel Torments he had endured ; while *Estefania*, on the other Hand, beg'd his Pardon for her having been the cause of them all ; adding, that she thought she could not otherwise repair what she had done, than by marrying him, if he was so minded, since she had already a Daughter by him, and Wealth enough to make them both easy. I leave you to imagine how *Trapassa* relished this Proposal ; to whom the least good Fortune had seemed extraordinary, at his escaping from so uneasy a condition. He returned fresh Embraces for the happy News she brought him, and heartily accepted of the advantageous Offers she made him,

him, desiring her to give him some Tydings of his Daughter, whom he was impatient to see. *Estefania*, over-joy'd to find him so well disposed, made him a present of a very handsome Suit of Cloaths which she had prepared for him ; and the very next Morning they set out for *Seville*, where *Trapassa*, charmed with his Daughter, who was then about five Years old, did once in his Life a Christian-like Action, in marrying *Estefania* in the Face of the Church. They changed their Lodgings, and went into another part of the Town, resolved to live quite different from what they had hitherto done. And as *Estefania* imagined that what *Trapassa* had suffered in the Gallies, had made him wiser, and that the Grey-hairs he had brought out of them would put a stop to the Continuation of his Debauches, she endeavoured to procure him some handsome Employment at *Seville*, as well to keep him out of Idleness, as because it was just he should contribute somewhat to the charge of their Maintenance: But an evil Disposition, as was that of *Trapassa*, is with great Difficulty corrected ; and if he had now for a little while, behaved himself with some reserve, it was owing to the Advice, and to the Reprimands which his Wife

was continually giving him : So that by his Negligence he remained without any other Employment, than that of going every Day to the Gaming-houses, to the Plays, and to all the other places where your Idlers and Loundgers are used to resort to ease themselves of the Burthen of their time : This gave some Uneasiness to his Wife ; but having nothing so much at Heart as living peaceably, she often made herself Blind to his ill Conduct and Debauchery, and endeavoured to comfort and divert herself in the Company of her Daughter, who was now about eight Years of Age, and who already exceeded in Beauty all the Girls in the Town. Idleness, which is the Root of all Evil, spurred on *Trapassa* to his old Trade of Gaming (a Sea where so much Riches and so many Estates are daily Shipwrecked) he began with playing for a little (by way of Diversion) but afterwards venturing more and more, he played away every thing he could lay Hands on. His Wife soon missed several of her things, and did not doubt but her Husband was the Thief : But all she could do to help herself, was to weep and complain of her hard Fortune, though she blamed none but herself for the Occasion of it. *Trapassa* seeing
her

her thus afflicted, promised her he would amend : But his Itch for Gaming growing worse and worse ; he made a shift, in four Yearstime, to sell and pawn every thing of value that he could find in the House ; but being at last reduced to the utmost Necessity, he did nothing but rack his Imagination for some Contrivance to supply his Extravagancies : He could have wished in his Heart, that his Wife, who was still an agreeable Woman, would descend to some Actions unworthy of her new Reputation ; but she was grown so very good, and so changed from what she was before, that he durst not mention any such thing to her ; the poor Woman was so much afflicted at her Husband's wretched Conduct, that she grew careless of every thing : She even became less solicitous about the Education of her Daughter, who had attained the Age of twelve Years ; and who during these Disorders lived in all manner of Licentiousness, to which she was naturally inclined ; shewing herself every Day at the Window with no small Affectation.

The Regret and Uneasiness that it gave to poor *Estefania* to see herself reduced to Poverty, joined to the discontent she received from her Husband, quickly threw
her

her into a Distemper, of which she died a Year afterwards, with a perfect Repentance of her past Faults ; calling up all her Strength in this Extremity, to die as good a Death, as her Husband had made her live an ill Life : She was Buried very ordinary, *Trapassa* not having it in his power to do as he could have wished. He was very much grieved at her Death ; and began too late to see the great Fault he had committed in having continued his Debauchery, and that if he had followed his Wife's good advice, he might have lived honourably all the rest of his Days upon what he had. The only comfort that was left him, and the hope whereon he built all his Happiness, was the Beauty of his Daughter, whom he thought sufficiently charming to procure him a Son-in-Law that might keep him from want ; not considering that the Virtue of the Age consists in Riches alone, and that all the Accomplishments and Graces in the World, are of no Force, if destitute of Wealth. The unhappy *Trapassa*, as miserable as he had made himself, did not leave off frequenting the Gaming-houses, not indeed to play (for he had not wherewithal) but to receive what he had formerly given, namely, the *Barato*, which is what the Spaniards

Spaniards are used to bestow on the Standers-by, when they have had any considerable Luck, and which is commonly the surest Income of those that have ruined themselves at Play.

Trapassa's being so little at Home, gave his Daughter an opportunity of following her own bad Inclinations: She was continually at the Window; which brought a great many Gallants to walk about the Street: The Father, who was not ignorant of any thing that passed, though he might easily have prevented it, suffered her to take her own way; thinking that she might get herself such a Husband as might supply his Wants, so high an Opinion he had of her Charms. This indeed was the honestest Refuge he had to fly to. He therefore left the young *Rufina* (which was his Daughter's name) to her own disposal; wishing she might win the Hearts of those that Gallanted her. *Trapassa* was more lucky than he could imagine; among her Adorers, there was one very Rich, who was smitten with *Rufina's* Beauty: *Rufina* had taken the Title of *Donna* (which belongs only to Women of Quality) because her Mother was called by it: And if it had not been so, she would have taken it nevertheless; for 'tis a thing that
costs

costs but little. This Courtier of hers was a *Peru* Agent, a Man of more Credit than real Wealth, but generally reputed to be very Rich : He was about fifty Years old, and tho' he heard that his Miltress had not a Penny to her Fortune, and that he should be burthened with her Father who was a ruined Man ; yet he continued to love her, and was resolved to take her as she was : For when Love gets the better of an old Man, 'tis very hard to cure him. *Lawrence de Saravia* (this was the Lover's Name) was so wondrously Enamoured of *Rufina's* Beauty, that in eight Days the Marriage was concluded, and he saw himself in Possession of what he wished for. As he was a Man of Substance and Credit, he was very willing to maintain his Wife's Father ; and so carried him Home to his House, though he knew he was a great Gamester. The first Days of the Nuptials were all spent in Merriment : He presented his Wife with fine Cloaths, Rings, and Jewels, but yet not above his Condition ; for being a Man in Years, he did not love Profusion ; which Temper of his was not very agreeable to *Rufina*, who delighted in nothing so much as in being richly Dressed, and who desired every thing that was worn by Ladies of the highest Quality ;

ty ; which made her have no great Love for her Husband, who took a little after the *Indians*, and was consequently covetous and careful to save what he had. Knowing that his Father-in-Law was mad of Gaming and not worth a Groat, he would not trust his Wife with any of the Money that he had in his House, no not even with what was necessary for the Expence of House-keeping ; this ruined all *Trapassa's* Expectations, which were, that by his Daughter's Marriage he might get where-withal to play, out of the Money that would be in her power ; so bewitched he was to that unaccountable Passion. *Rufina*, who saw her Husband fully employed in his Affairs, took her time to go Abroad every Morning, under pretence of doing her Devotions, that it might please God to bless them with Children : This was her excuse to her Husband, but the true Cause was to shew herself in the Street, and in the Churches. The first that saw her and became Enamoured of her, was the Son of a Citizen of *Seville*, one of the most debauched young Fellows living ; one, that in short, was no less so, than *Trapassa* had been : He was born of very honest Parents, but was a great Rogue for all that. His name was *Roberto*, he was of
a very

a very engaging Mein ; and wrought so effectually upon *Rufina*, that she placed all her Affection on him, hoping to have great Presents from him, and so to be able to satisfy the violent Inclination she had to spend high, and to go as brave as she was handsome ; and which she could not obtain of her Husband, who loved his Cash too well to consent to such Extravagancies. The first Request she made to her love was of a Suit of Cloaths, like one that she had seen upon the Back of one of her Neighbours, promising, that as soon as he had granted her this Favour, she would refuse him nothing that lay in her Power to do to gratify him. *Roberto*, who by his insolent Boastings had made her believe there was no end of his Wealth, immediately assured her she should have what she desired : But not having it in his Power to execute his promise, he bethought himself of this Trick to cheat her: Being acquainted with the Neighbour who was Owner of that handsome Suit of Cloaths, he waited upon her, and beg'd her to lend it him, pretending it was for a Play which was to be Acted in a Convent of *Nuns*. There was no refusing him what he asked, and so at the end of three Days, in which he made *Rufina* believe they

they were making, he brought them to her in a green Cloth, while her Husband was in the City busy'd about his Affairs. She thanked him for them with a very good Will; and since he was so punctual, that she might not seem ungrateful, she granted him whatever he could wish in return. He took his leave of *Rufina*, who meant to tell her Husband a Kinsman had sent her that Suit of Cloaths from *Madrid*, that he might have no Suspicion of what had happened: *Roberto* was now contriving how he should return those Cloaths to the Person he had borrowed them of. *Saravia* had never seen him, which made him undertake the Stratagem which I am going to relate. He let pass three or four Days, during which he told the Lady the Festival continued; and afterwards disguising himself in a Footman's Livery, he went himself about Dinner time to *Saravia's* House, saying he was Servant to the Lady who owned the Suit of Cloaths: *Saravia* ordered he should come up, and when he was before him, he said, that his Mistress sent him to fetch the Suit of Cloaths she had lent to *Madam Rufina*, to take a Pattern from them: *Saravia* turning towards his Wife, what Suit of Cloaths, says he to her, does the Fel-
low

low mean? She, who soon knew him to be *Roberto*, said to him, Friend, come again to morrow Morning and you shall have it. To which *Roberto* replied, my Mistress ordered me not to return without it; because this Evening she is to be Godmother at a Christening, and she cannot do without it: How do I know, answered *Rufina*, if you are really that Lady's Servant, and whether I may trust you with the Cloaths? The cunning Rogue, who plainly saw which Foot the Jade limpt of, and that she had no mind to restore the Suit of Cloaths; they are of such a Colour, says he; so and so trim'd; giving all the Marks of the Suit; and she sent it you, says he further, in a green *Italian* Cloth, which is done round with a silk Fringe. *Saravia*, hearing him describe the Cloaths so minutely; my Dear, says he to his Wife, here is no room for a Doubt: And since he desires the Cloaths so earnestly, his Mistress must certainly want them for the Reason he tells you; if you do not care to rise from Table, give me the Key of the Chest where they are laid, and I will fetch them myself. *Rufina* had nothing to say for herself after this; but ready to burst with Fury, she arose, took the Cloaths out of the Chest, and giving them

them to *Roberto*, pay my Respects says she to Madam *Leonora*, and tell her, I hope she will pardon me for not sending back the Cloaths sooner ; for I could not meet with the Lady that begg'd me to borrow them for a Pattern. The Spark, in his Footman's disguise, taking the Cloaths, made a low Bow, and left *Rufina* with her Eyes enflamed with Passion, and cursing him in her Heart for having so impudently affronted her. *Saravia* asked her, what made her borrow those Cloaths ; she answered, that she had done it at the Request of a Friend of hers, who wanted to have a Suit like it, because the Fashion of it pleased her extreamly, being very genteel and modish. She easily perswaded her Husband of whatever she pleased ; yet she was terribly enraged against *Roberto*, for the Trick he had put upon her, in taking back that Suit of Cloaths, which she had been so highly pleased with, and of which she thought herself the Mistress : She firmly resolved to be Revenged on him at any rate ; but thinking it necessary to communicate her design to a Maid in whom she mightily confided, *Trapassa* over-hearing them, learnt the whole Story ; and knowing the Man, because he frequented the Gaming-houses, and looking upon

upon himself to be obliged to Revenge the affront done to his Daughter ; he accosted him one Day in the Street, and told him that he wanted Satisfaction of him for an Injury which he should let him know more of when they were in private : *Roberto* readily followed him out of the Town, where being by themselves, *Trapassa* told him the Cause of his giving him that challenge : They immediately drew, and after several hearty Thrusts, *Trapassa* received one which pierced his Heart, so that he died upon the spot, without having time to do the least Act of Contrition ; which is commonly the case of those who live no better than he had done. *Roberto* took Refuge in a place of Security ; and *Trapassa's* Body was carried to his Son-in-Law's House, where it was received both with Joy and with Sorrow ; with Joy, because it was no small burthen removed, to be rid of the most troublesome and the most extravagant of Men ; with Sorrow, because of the unavoidable charge of his Funeral. But *Rufina* testified by her Cries, and by her Tears, that the Death of her Father was as afflicting to her, as it was welcome to her Husband : She took on most violently, and could not becomforted, being now left without any manner.

manner of support ; for all the Relations she now had in the World was a Husband whom she did not love : On the contrary, *Saravia* thought no Man upon Earth could be more happy than he was, in possessing so young and so beautiful a Wife : But she was a little too young and too beautiful for him : The proportion between their Ages, which Parents ought chiefly to regard in the Marriage of their Children, was not observed here ; an old is not a morsel for a young Woman's Tooth : Though *Rufina* had always been kept within the bounds of Modesty by her Parents, the Contempt she conceived for her Husband, joined to her Affectation of being richly Habited, and her desire of Revenging the Affront she had received from *Roberto*, made her bid adieu to all Restraints, profane the Marriage-Bed, and give herself blindly up to every thing that could bring her Pleasure or Profit : The Injury which *Roberto* had done her, was what run so predominantly in her Head, that she could live no longer without Revenge. But as she stood in need of other Hands than her own for that purpose, she sought out all imaginable Occasions for getting a Gallant that might vigorously

gorously execute her Designs, and the following was the best she met with.

One of the *Fridays* which are Solemnized with a great Concourse of People from *Easter* to *Whitsontide*, in *Triano*, the Suburbs of *Seville*, through which flows the *Guadalquivir*, a famous River of *Andalusia*, and the Mirror of that populous City ; *Rufina* went in a Boat covered with Boughs, to see the Festival ; whither she was carried by her Husband's Order, by a she Neighbour whom he believed to be one of the modestest and virtuous Women in the World ; but the poor Man was sadly mistaken, for no Woman was ever more loose or more corrupt. She therefore hired a Bark for herself *Rufina* and two she Friends : But the Waterman's Avarice prevailed on him to take other Company into his Boat ; and among the rest, a young Gentleman who had a long while watched for such an Opportunity, and had employed Spies to find it out, who had not failed to give him Notice of this : So soon as they were got into the Boat, *Rufina* shewed her Face ; which the Spark (whom we shall call *Felician*) had no sooner seen, than he obliged some of his Friends who were upon the Shore with him, to go into the Boat with him, for which he
gave

gave a piece of Money to the Waterman. When they were all entered, *Felician* took his Seat next to *Rufina*, by way of Induction into her good Graces. He was the Son of a rich *Cavalier*, who had made his Fortune in the *Indies*: He had no Child but this, who spent as much Money as he pleased; so that it was thought the Son could not live such a Life very long, without dissipating the greatest part of the Riches which his Father had scraped together in such abundance; for he was continually Gaming, was always Gallanting the Ladies, and hardly ever out of the Company of a pack of Rakes who assisted him in his Debaucheries; and was so prodigal, he paid for every Body that kept him Company. Over and above these admirable Qualities, he stood mightily upon his Punctilio's of Honour, and valued himself hugely upon his Valour; a Vice common to most of the young People of *Seville*, who have so much Liberty given them as him we are now speaking of: After being thus seated next to *Rufina*, and his Comrades by her Friends, the Boat pushed off, and row'd along the Shore, not Landing in a good long half Hour; for which delay the Waterman had been very well paid. Of all this time *Felician* did not
lose

lose a Moment : He made a Declaration of his Love to *Rufina* in such obliging Terms, that she gave entire Belief to what he said, and let him sufficiently know by the Complacency of her answer that she took delight in his Company. *Felician* was a Man of Wit, and of a very agreeable Humour upon such Occasions : He made the best of his Qualifications, with which the Ladies were extremely well satisfied, and especially *Rufina*, who took a singular Pleasure in his Conversation. She told him her Name, her House, and her Husband's Profession, without disguising any of her Circumstances : *Felician* did the same, adding a thousand Protestations of Service and Obedience. All that Afternoon was spent in Gallantries, to the great Satisfaction of *Rufina*, whose Wishes aimed chiefly at two things ; the first, to be Revenged of *Roberto* by *Felician's* means ; the other, to scruce out of him wherewithal to go Fine, and to supply her extravagant Expences : What she had premeditated succeeded in the manner you shall hear. From that time *Felician* began very constantly to frequent *Rufina's* Street, during all the time that he knew her Husband was employed Abroad. That Lady was unwilling her Lover should find her so easily won

won as he imagined; for remembering *Roberto's* trick, she was afraid of having something like it put upon her again. Before she gave him Entrance into her House, she had a mind to try his Liberality, which she easily compassed: For *Felician* who had been always profuse, was much more so upon this Occasion, making her Presents of fine Cloaths, Jewels, and several other things, without reckoning the Expence he was at in Treats and Collations: So that *Rufina* began to be very well satisfied in that point. It is a common thing to be disgusted by Enjoyment: But it was not so with *Felician*; his love increased every Day, and grew to such a height as was hardly ever seen before.

It happened about this time *Roberto* won above six hundred Crowns at play: His Humour was contrary to that of most other Gamesters, who are seldom very heedful of their Dress; their Passion for play hindering them from running into other Expences. This Man, on the contrary, was always extreamly well Dressed: He perceived that *Felician* a little too constantly frequented *Rufina's* Street, and thereupon suspected that he courted her. Jealousy immediately revived the love he formerly had for her: He was uneasy at

C

having

having a Rival, and resolved to get again
 into her good Graces, and to make her
 amends for the wrong he was sensible he
 had done her. In this design he every
 Day walked backwards and forwards several
 times through *Rufina's* Street, which
Felician did not like by any means: *Rufina*
 was extremely offended, that one who had
 injured her so grossly should have the Impudence
 again to pretend to a place in her
 Favour: Her anger was increased by this
 new Courtship; and she thought she could
 never have a fairer Opportunity of being
 revenged on him by means of *Felician* who
 was her Gallant, and whom she made a
 Party in her Quarrel, than by making him
 believe that *Roberto* did all his Endeavour to
 remove him from her good Graces: Thus
 it is that Women are used to employ those
 that Court them; from which so many
 strange and fatal Accidents daily happen.
Rufina was too wise to let *Felician* know a
 tittle of what had passed between her and
Roberto. She carried on her design so art-
 fully, insinuating to him that *Roberto* was
 continually pressing her with advantageous
 Offers, which she despised for his sake;
 that *Felician* no longer doubted it, seeing
 him every Day, and most part of the
 Night about the House: She added, to
 irritate

irritate him the more, that that troublesome Fellow was the Reason of her not seeing him so often as she could wish. The thing was carried so far, that *Felician* spurred on by Jealousy, and being one of the most resolute young Fellows in Town, met *Roberto* one Night in his Mistress's Street, about the time that *Rufina* was gone to Bed, and when her Husband was overlooking some Accounts of his Brokerage. So soon as ever *Felician* perceived *Roberto*, he called him by his Name, and having talked together, that they might give no Suspicion in the Street, they went into a little By-corner behind the House, just under the Window of a Room where *Saravia* put all his Papers, and where he was then Busy : The two Rivals being come to this place, he that spoke first was *Felician*, who said to him as follows : Signior *Roberto*, for some Days past I have observed you to frequent this Street with too much Assiduity ; and I was in doubt what should be the Cause of it, because there are several Ladies of Merit who might occasion your coming hither : But at length I have discovered that 'tis *Seniora Rufina* who is your Inducement : I have been confirmed in this Suspicion, as well by my own Eye-sight, as by the Testimony I have received of it from

her Servants, to whom you Talk and make Presents, to insinuate yourself into her Affection. I have made my Addresses to her a great while, and the Services I have done her have so far won me her Affection, that I have received the most private Favours from her : I am one that is not given to brag of his Amours ; but to hinder you from proceeding any further, I am forced to discover thus much to you, being assured that you will keep it as Secret as a Man of Honour ought. I have declared to you my Love, and the Advantages I have gained by it, in order to oblige you to lay down your design : If you do so, you will save yourself from a great deal of Trouble and Disappointment, and me from very just Resentment.

Roberto hearkened very attentively to Felician's Discourse, and with as much Attention or more Rufina's Husband had heard it too : For he was come very uneasy to the Window, hearing News which so nearly concerned his Honour. And though whatever he could hear was sure to encrease his Disturbance ; he had nevertheless the Curiosity to listen to Roberto's Answer, which was in these Words.

Signior Felician, I don't wonder at your having taken Notice of the Addresses I make to Seniors Rufina, since my so doing is of
so

so much consequence to you as I now bear it is : And I believe you will wonder as little that I should have the same design, when you know the Encouragement I have to undertake it. I am not given any more than you to publish Favours I receive from the Ladies ; but since you open your Heart to me so frankly, I think myself bound to do the same to you, that you may not be surprized at my Proceeding : I was in that Lady's Favour before you, and have obtained from her the very thing you boast of ; but by a certain unlucky Accident I have lost her good Will, which I'm in hopes in time to recover ; and I would not have you doubt but that I shall use my utmost Skill so to do. If I succeed and she continues to accept my Services, you must e'en prevail upon yourself to have Patience : For I shall be so far from receding from my Pretensions, that I shall do all that lies in my Power to hinder her from admitting of yours, and to put it out of her remembrance that you ever were her Lover : Upon this they both drew, Felician averring that he had the only Right to her, and Roberto affirming the contrary : In this dispute the Sword of him who was then in Possession, prevailed ; depriving Roberto of his Life by a strong Push which went quite through his Heart. The clashing of Swords was not great, because that of Felician

wrought its Effect in a Moment: So that no Body in the Neighbourhood heard any thing of the Quarrel except *Saravia*, who we may be sure would never publish it since it touch'd his Honour so close. For fear the Body should be found there, *Felician* took it upon his Shoulders, and carrying it to a Monastery, left it before the Gate, and retired into another for his Security, 'till he saw what would come of this Affair.

Saravia, confounded at what he had seen and heard, and exasperated against his Wife, stormed up and down the Room like a Madman, and meditated horrible Revenge for his lost Honour: He could not bear the Thoughts of *Rufina's* Infidelity, when he reflected on the many Reasons she had to be true to him. She, in the mean while, was fast asleep in her Bed, little dreaming what had happened for her sake. The first Thought that came into *Saravia's* Imagination, was to give a loose to his Rage, to go directly up to his Traitors's Chamber, and to stab her as she slept: But then he considered, that the Murderer having carried the Body from under his Window, he should be accused of having killed her without a Cause, and that he should want Proofs, having
for

for Witnesses only two Servant-maids; who would rather Swear against him than for him. He resolved, as the surest means, to make away with her privately, by a lingering Poyson : But he thought he should not satisfy his just Resentment, if he deferred a Revenge which ought to be Executed immediately. Then he hit upon another Expedient, which was to leave *Seville*, and abandon his Wife; but this design was laid aside, having several Affairs undecided, which depended upon his good Character, and fearing the ill Construction that might be made of it, to the Shame and Confusion of a Man of his Age and Reputation. This Thought brought him back again to his first Design of stabbing her; but before he executed this Cruelty (which if well considered was no Cruelty, but rather the just Punishment of her Crime) he was of Opinion that it would be necessary for his Justification to leave in Writing the Provocations he had to commit that Murther. For this purpose he took Pen in Hand, and began to write down the Injury which had been done him by his Wife, and the Revenge he had taken for it : But thinking that he did not express in Terms strong enough, the Offence that had been committed against

him, he tore what he had written ; which he repeated three times, he was in such an Agitation. He again set himself to writing, which was the fourth time: But as he knew that he ought to begin his Vengeance upon the Adulterers, and that he could not do that, being ignorant who they were ; he concluded at last that he should be sufficiently Revenged, when he had killed his Wife. Great part of the Night was spent in these Thoughts, Writing, blotting out, and tearing every thing he had Writ: At length being entirely resolved in this Fury to execute his bloody Design, he writ one Paper more without scratching out a Word ; having before well weighed what he was to write: And after having expressed as well as it was possible in the Condition he was in, the Affront he had received, he was taken with such a violent Agitation of Spirits, that he Died suddenly.

All this happened while *Rufina* was fast asleep. When she waked, missing her Husband, she called him ; and hearing no Answer, she slipped on a Gown and went down into his Room, where she found the Candle still lighted, and *Saravia* dead upon the Floor. She was as much amazed as we may imagine she would be: all she could
do

do in that surprize, was to call her Maids, who rose and ran to see this strange sight : They wondered no less than their Mistress at so odd an Accident. As they were taking up the Corpse to carry it into the chief Apartment in the House (before the Neighbours were made acquainted with his unaccountable Death) *Rufina* spy'd a Paper half full of Writing, wherein she read these Words.

To the Intent that my Justification may be known to all those that shall read this Paper ; I declare that this misfortune is wholly owing to the Levity of my infamous Wife, who profaning the Holy Sacrament of Marriage, by which we were united in the Face of the Church, without considering the great Love I have born to her, has given herself up to two Gallants at the same time, who having quarrell'd about which should have the preference, the most unhappy of the two was killed by the other ; and as I myself was witness of my Disgrace, and heard from their Mouths the Relation of my Dishonour ; I was resolved to Revenge my Infamy thus. Here ended the Writing, for Death surprizing him, he had expired in a Moment.

Rufina was in the utmost Surprize both at what she saw and at what she read ; so that for above half an Hour she could nei-

ther stir nor speak ; reflecting that the greatest Secrets in the World are at last Revealed, and that Heaven makes them known either for our Conversion, or our Punishment : This Death filled her at once with Fear and with Affliction ; with Fear, to see how suddenly it had taken Effect by the Resentment of an Injury wherein she had been an Actor ; with Affliction, to see her Husband thus dead, without knowing how to disguise so ugly an Accident. Remorse of Conscience stung her for having been so perfidious towards a Man who had shewn so much Love to her, and who by Marrying her, had made her Circumstances easy, if she had been so wise as to have made a right Use of her good Fortune. The great Affection which her Neighbours knew he had always born her, gave her some Encouragement, and made her take the Advice which was given her by one of her Maids in whom she most confided, which was to put her Husband into his Bed, and make such Lamentations when it was Morning that her Neighbours might hear her, to whom she should pretend with abundance of Grief that she had found him Dead by her side when she waked, and that those two Maids, to help on the Story, should give out that their Master infallibly

fallibly killed himself by having suppt too late and eat more than ordinary. By that time they had all studied their parts, day appeared : *Rufina* fell to crying and lamenting with all her Force; the next Neighbours ran in at the Noise, and found her half Dressed, roaring and tearing her Hair for Sorrow at having lost so good a Husband : The two Maids likewise did their Parts to Perfection, in relating the Cause of their good Master's Death, and saying that they for their parts had advised him not to eat so much, for he would certainly be out of Order with an Excess so contrary to the Constitution of a Man of his Age : Every Body was satisfied with these Reasons ; some of *Rufina's* Friends kept near her for fear she should swoon away, so well did she act her Affliction, and they did their utmost to comfort her. Nor had the cunning Gypsie forgot to burn the Paper she had found, for fear of its telling Tales. The Officers of Justice, who are never wanting upon such Occasions, came in soon after, and upon the Assurances which were given them by the Neighbours that the Deceased had always lived in a perfect Harmony with his Wife, they had no Suspicion of his having Died by any violent Means. Poor *Saravia* was
Buried,

Buried, and *Rufina's* Head ran so much upon counterfeiting her Grief to the Life, that she had not remembred to do what Widows generally do on such Occasions, namely to make away with as much of their Husband's Wealth as they can when he is dead : So that one of his Nephews, after having taken care of his Uncle's Interment, came and seized all that he found in the House, and *Rufina* was obliged to go to Law with him for what was her Legal Due.

Let us go back to the place where we left *Roberto's* Body, which was found in the Morning by the *Monks*, who did not know it : They were going to Bury it, if they had not been advised to have it exposed in some publick Place to see if any Body knew it, and that if it was one who had either a Father or Relations in the Town, they might be acquainted with the Misfortune which had happened to their Family : That by this means they would be Reimbursed the charge of the Burial, and be paid for the Masses they should say for the repose of his Soul. This advice was relished by the Superior of the Convent, who immediately gave Information, that very early in the Morning they had found that young Man dead at their

their Church-Gate. The Corpse was put in a little place which was near the Convent ; with two Tapers lighted ; and a Man passing by sometime afterwards knew him ; he told them who he was, and carried the ill News to his Parents, who were extreemly afflicted at his Death ; his Father had often foretold him what would certainly happen, for the Life he led gave no Room to hope any thing better. He was Interr'd in that very Convent, and all Diligence was used to find out the Murtherer : But *Seville* being a very large populous Town, it was impossible to discover him : *Rufina* was the only Person who knew who had done it, seeing her Gallant absent, and *Roberto* slain : She was extreemly glad in herself at being revenged of a Man who had put so great an Affront upon her ; and it was very lucky for her that no Notice was taken of the Blood that was spilt in the back Street : If that had come to the Knowledge of the Justice, she had had a great deal of Trouble about it : For all Appearances were against her ; and the Neighbours could have given Evidence that they had many times seen those two Rivals in that little Street.

Rufina

Rufina being now a Widow, and which is worst of all, poor and destitute of all Conveniences, though naturally given to great Extravagancies ; she was resolved to make the best of her Charms, and to subsist herself in her Vanities at the Expence of her Honour.

Saravia's Funeral Ceremonies being performed, and his Nephew having taken Possession of his Effects, it was decreed in Law that he should pay *Rufina* her share, and this was so little in Comparison of what she was used to spend, that she was forced to leave her House to take one of less Rent.

The Nephew however did not find his Uncle to have died in the Circumstances he expected ; because having been concerned in abundance of Affairs, they were very much perplexed, so that he had no great Matter left, when he had made even with all the Creditors.

Rufina, though young, amorous and perfectly Beautiful, and living now in another part of the Town, did not follow the Example of many other Widows, who as soon as their Husbands are tipt over the Perch, seek all Opportunities by shewing themselves in their mourning Weeds, to draw in some other to supply the place of the Deceased.

There

There was come in the Fleet from *Peru*, a Man born among the Mountains of *Leon*, who had begun his Fortune by being Servant to a Merchant of *Seville*, and one who upon his Master's Cost and some little Trading into the *Indies*, was grown Rich; insomuch that in a few Years he was accounted one of the ablest Merchants that Traded to *Peru*: Upon a second Voyage he made thither he was advanced to a publick Employment, and having thereby added much to his Wealth, he was returned again to *Seville*, where he sold the Commodities he had brought over at double what they cost him, so fortunate was he in all his Ventures.

Marquino (so was this lucky Merchant called) was a Person of about fifty Years of Age; the most covetous sordid Fellow that ever was: He grudged himself whatever he Eat and Drank, though even below Penury itself, and frequently Fasted, purposely to spare Expence: He had no more Servants than what he barely needed: His whole Train consisting in a Factor, a Lacquey, a *Moor*-slave who looked to his Mule, and a Maid to dress his pitiful Commons: He kept his Family so short in Point of Victuals, that it was wondered any one would serve him: His miserly Disposition

Disposition found the whole City Discourse : Another would have been ashamed of it, but he only laugh'd at it ; applauding himself, and making it his whole Business to heap up Wealth, whereof he had abundance.

Rufina hearing of this Man, concluded, that he might be made an excellent Cully ; whom if she could smite, as she expected, her Condition would be better than ever it had been.

Marquino lived without the City, in a little Tenement he had purchased of one who owed him some Money, which he knew not well how to get in otherwise : For he was naturally so perfect a Slave to his Profit, that he little minded his Pleasures. So that he got that Tenement, with a neat House on it, very cheap, and in Satisfaction for his Debt : It stood near *St. Bernard's* Monastery, in the midst of a pleasant Valley. He lived there to save the Rent of a House in the City : He had so fortified it, that no Thieves, either by Day or Night, could make any Breach into it. All the Doors were of an extraordinary thickness, the Windows had Bars and Grates, the Walls very high and very strong. He had secured the place within with Fire-arms, which he always kept.

kept charged, and many Halbards and Partisans, which were disposed of near the Gate. He was forced to take one Servant more into his Retinue, to wit, a Fellow to order his Garden, and to make the best Advantage he could of it, a married Man, who should carry the Fruits and other things to the Market, to make the best of them ; so Vigilant was his Avarice. His Treasure was disposed into a secret Place behind his Bed where he lay himself, in strong Iron-chests ; and every Night before he went to Bed, he searched all the Rooms in the House. Thus did this wretched Miser live, though he had no Children to succeed him ; having never been Married, nor intended to be, though very advantageous Matches were daily proffered him.

Rufina had laid her design, to bring in this covetous Merchant into the Noose ; and to effect it, she communicated it to a Person who was Excellent at such things, an old Friend of her Fathers. This Man had played some Pranks at *Madrid*, which had occasioned his Removal thence to *Cadiz*, and his Atchievements there too, caused his Departure thence to *Seville*, where he was lurking up and down, and spending some Money, which it cost him more hazard.

hazard than pains to get. He was one of the most accomplished Men in point of Larceny of his time, but very fearful of falling into the Hands of Justice, lest there might arise up in Judgment against him some of his former Offences ; which were such as had preferred him to the Gallies. This Person (whose Name was *Garay*) *Rufina* took to assist her in the compassing the Design. Having given him Instructions what he was to do, and told him, that *Marquino* never returned to his House 'till about Sun-set, they both passed by *Marquino's* Garden, he on a Mule, and she on a good Horse. She had put off her Mourning, and put on another Dress, with a Hat and Feather, as the *Seville-Ladies* are wont to go, when they are in the Country.

They passed by the Garden, just as the Gardiner was opening the Door. *Garay*, coming up to him, *Friend*, (said he) *here is a Lady would not willingly go into the City to Day : If you will afford her Entertainment for to Night, I will satisfy you to your own Desire ; besides that you will do us an extraordinary Kindness : For you will thereby prevent a great Misfortune, which she cannot otherwise avoid.* The Gardiner who was afraid of his Master's displeasure, told him that he durst

durst not be so bold, as to receive any Person into his House, without his Knowledge ; and that he had expressly forbid him the doing any such thing. But *Garay*, who knew the Virtue and Power of Money, took a considerable Sum out of his Pocket, and giving it to the Gardiner, *here Friend* (said he) *take this in earnest of more.* The Gardiner's Wife longing to know what Business they might have with her Husband, comes up to them, and seeing the Proffers that were made him, undertook to lodge the Gentlewoman in her own Room ; making it appear to her Husband, that their Master should never come to the Knowledge of it, in regard their Houses were at a good distance one from the other, and it would be very hard if that Night he searcht the whole House, as many times a Toy took him in the Head to do.

In short the Wife's Arguments prevailed, so that the Gardiner was content the Gentlewoman should lodge secretly that Night at his House, upon the receipt of six Pistols which *Garay* gave him as an earnest of a greater Sum promised him. He thereupon took *Rufina* off the Horse and brought her into the Garden, where she took leave of *Garay*, who had already received his Cue. Being

Being come into the Gardener's Room she took off what cover'd her Face, and astonish'd the Gardener and his Wife, at the Sight of her Beauty, though she seem'd to be very Melancholy, as if some great Misfortune had happen'd to her, which she had ready to relate to *Marquino*, in Case she might come to Discourse with him. The Sun was hardly set but he came into the Garden ; the *Negro* entering a little before to have the Door open'd, which he himself lock'd on the inside, and carry'd the Key along with him. He chanced to be that Night a little more weary than ordinary, which occasion'd his going to Bed very betimes, after he had eaten a piece of Bread, and some of his own Garden-fruits, and washed them down with a Glass of Spring-water. He only visited that part of the House where he lodged himself, and came not down to the Gardeners, which never escaped his privy search, when he thought of it. His Family, who kept more Fasting-days in the Year than the Church her self had appointed, Supped that Night, in Imitation of the Master, very soberly.

Marquino gets up the next Morning betimes, and gives the Slave Money, to go to the Market, while he went about his Affairs.

Affairs in the City, with order to have Dinner ready against his Return. *Rufina* was at a loss how to bring about her Design, finding things fell not out according to her Expectation: But still waiting the Opportunity, she told her Entertainers that she was extremely troubled at her Uncle's stay, (so she call'd *Garay*) and that all her Sadness proceeded thence. The Gardener's Wife, who was a good hearty Woman, found her all the Diversion she could.

Marquino comes home at Noon, with an Intention to dine in his Garden, and before he sat down, he would needs take a turn about it, to see if any thing were wanting; and he observ'd that there wanted some pieces of Wood for the more convenient Watering of the several *Plats*. As he was going to the Gardeners to see if he had any fit for that purpose, the Wife perceiving him coming, very hastily shuffled *Rufina* into a little back Room, where she was wont to lie; But in Regard it could not be done so suddenly, but that *Marquino* coming in might hear the rustling of the Silks and see *Rufina*'s shadow, he steps into the Room where she was retired, and having found her, he led her out by the Hand; and bringing her out to the Light,
he

he found her so Beautiful, that he was Astonished thereat. The Gardeners Wife wondred that her Master, instead of chiding her, as she expected, only asked her who the Lady was? She answer'd, that the Night before, passing by their Door with an ancient Gentleman, who seem'd as sad as her self; they had very earnestly intreated she might be lodged there but that Night, to avoid a great Misfortune, which would have happen'd to them, if they had gone any further, and so she had made bold to break his Orders.

While the Gardener's Wife was giving *Marquino* this Account, he very attentively consider'd the strange Lady; who seem'd to be extremely troubled in Mind, which added to the Attractions of her Beauty. *Marquino* was so taken with her, that contrary to his unsociable and Covetous Humour, he told the Gardener's Wife, That she had done very well, in entertaining the Lady, though contrary to his Orders, which in such a Case were not to be observed, where Compassion and Charity plead for the Relief of those that are in Trouble. *This Lady, (said he) deserves a better Reception than she has found in your poor Lodgings, I heartily proffer her my House, if she will but honour it with her Presence. Ruffins*
 thank

thankt him very civilly for his obliging Proffers, and entreated him to allow her the privacy of that Lodging, for the little time she had to stay there; in regard she expected an Uncle of hers to come and fetch her away that Night.

Marquino who began to be inflamed, was sorry to hear that her stay at his House would be so short; but after a little pause, he told her, that though it were but for an Hour, she would infinitely oblige him, in the acceptation of the Proffer he made her with so much Affection.

She, who wisht no better, told him, that to make some Return to so great Civilities, she was ready to wait on him: With that she went to *Marquino's* Apartment, whither he led her by the Hand, to the great Satisfaction of the Gardener's Wife, who extreamly wondred to see her Master so civil and obliging: as she pass'd through the Rooms, she took particular Notice of all things; for though *Marquino* was Naturally a very covetous Person, yet as to the Furniture of his House, he was otherwise. He had very rich Tapestry, Hangings, Chairs suitable thereto, and Cabinets of Ivory, and Ebony. He immediately commanded his Slave to prepare an Excellent Dinner, an Employment he undertook

dertook with great Alacrity; as knowing he might reap some Advantage of that extraordinary Liberality of his Master. *Rufina* din'd with him, who helpt her still with the best the Table afforded, with importunate Excuses that there were no better for her.

As soon as they had din'd, he conducted her into a Chamber, set forth with a great number of curious Pictures, as also a sumptuous Bed of *China* work, where he entreated her to repose her self on it; a Custom the *Spaniards* have in Summer, as soon as they have dined, by reason of the Sultriness of the Country. He entreated her also to banish her disquiet, out of an assurance that she should be as safe in his House as in any Sanctuary, and that she should not want any thing which lay in his Power. She again return'd him her most affectionate Thanks, and complying with his Desires, she stay'd alone in the Room, which was the same where *Marquino* took his Repose every Day. He went into another, where he laid himself down much troubled and disquieted, as being fallen deeply in Love with his Fair Guest, and not knowing by what means he might induce her to favour him in what he desired of her, which if he could effect, he concluded

cluded himself the happiest Man in the World. Before he acquainted her with his Design, he was desirous to know the Cause, and what might occasion her stopping at his Garden, and thereby find whether there were any Obstruction that might oppose his Desires to serve her. To be satisfy'd in this, it was requisite he staid till she awoke; but she slept not at all, for she spent the time in considering, what Answer she should make him, when he came to question her.

Marquino thinking it now high time to speak to her, in order to the Satisfaction of his Curiosity, goes into her Chamber; telling her it was a close Day, and that he was afraid she might oversleep her self, and craving her Pardon that he had taken the Boldness to give her that Caution. She thanked him for the Tenderness he had for her Health, and assured him, That she had not refreshed her self at all; the Trouble she was in, not permitting her to take any rest. He begg'd of her that she would no longer smother the Cause of her Disquiet, and renew'd the Proffers he had made to serve her to the utmost of his Power. Having returned him her thanks, and thinking it now time to make some Progress in

D

her

her Design ; she gave him this Relation of her Adventures.

Granada, one of the most Famous and Eminent Cities of Spain, is the Place of my Birth : My Parents (there is no Necessity I should name them) are of the most Ancient and most Noble Families of any in all the Mountains of old Castile, and the whole Issue of their Matrimony was only a Brother of mine and my self. My Brother spent the Youthful part of his Age in Courting Ladies, and among other young Persons like himself, he play'd some Youthful Pranks, which oblig'd him, for fear of falling into the Hands of Justice, to absent himself from Granada ; and for my Part, I made it my only Business to serve and humour those who had brought me into the World. I spent whole Days at my Needle, not taking Example from my Companions, who only minded their Pleasure ; I was so Ignorant what Love meant, that I laugh'd at whatever related thereto, and thought those, who spent their time in Coquetting and entertaining those they call'd their Gallants, little better than so many distracted Persons.

But Love it seems resolv'd to punish this Contempt of mine, and you shall see how he did it. My Father and Mother being one Day gone to Visit a Friend of theirs in the Country, who had buryed his Wife not long before ; I heard

heard in the Street the clashing of Swords, as if some People had been Fighting; and looked out at the Window to see what might be the matter. I never had been guilty of such a Curiosity before, and had it been Heaven's Pleasure I might have shunned it then, I should not now be telling you my Misfortunes, which are such, that I shall never think on them without Tears. I there saw, to my sorrow three Men with their Swords drawn, Fighting against one, who defended himself with so great Courage, that he not only made his Party good a long time against so many Enemies, but also hurt two of them in the Head; he himself having received only a slight Wound. These three Hector's finding themselves so ill-hand'd by one Person, resolved to do their utmost to take away his Life; so that exasperated by their Wounds, they press'd upon him so much, that he was forced to retreat within our Gate, where they gave him two several thrusts into the Breast; upon which he fell, and was left for dead. Moved with Compassion to see so proper a young Man so disadvantageously engaged, I come down to the Gate, calling my Maids about me, to see what might be done for him. (Our House being in a lone-Street) for those who were come upon the Noise we made were so few, and those unarmed, that they were not able to part them. We lock'd the Doors and brought him in, and a Surgeon was imme-

diately sent for. His Wounds were so great, that we thought fit to dispose him into a Bed, in a Ground-room, where my Brother was wont to lie.

The young Man thanked me very civilly for the Favour he receiv'd from me; but alas! that good Office began with Compassion, but ended in Love. The Surgeon view'd his Wounds, but could not presently give any certain Judgment of them; though he whispered me in the Ear, that he thought they might cost him his Life. That Account of him struck me to the Heart, for having seen him Fight so Gallantly, I must needs acknowledge, that I had even then conceived an Inclination for him. But his kind Expressions afterwards, and his thanking me so genteely for the Obligations (he said) I had laid upon him, rais'd it into a perfect Love. My Father and Mother returned from their Visit, and ere they were got to our House were told by one of the Neighbours, (a Person of some Quality;) what had happened in their Absence, and how that I had put a Period to a Quarrel, by entertaining the Wounded Party in their House, out of Compassion and a Fear that he might be killed: Whereat they were well satisfyed, and commended the Charitable Office I had done in such an Extremity; for they were Persons who gladly embraced any Opportunity to exercise their Charity. They visited

visited the Wounded, encouraged him to take Heart, assuring him he should want nothing, their House could afford; and acknowledg'd it well done by me, that I had so rescued him. Upon which I took Occasion to spend most of my time in waiting on him; him I say, who is the Cause of all the Troubles and Afflictions which lie so heavy upon me. At the second dressing, the Surgeon assured us that his Wounds were not Mortal; which caused much Joy in our House, particularly to me, who became every Day more and more passionately in Love with him. As often as I could get out of my Father and Mother's Sight, I went to pass away the time in his Chamber, for which Kindness he made me extraordinary Acknowledgments. This young Cavalier was Born at Pampeluna, and was one of the most Eminent in that City. His Business at Granada was to Prosecute a Law-suit, against a very powerful Person, who knowing that there was little Justice on his side, that the Cause was of great Importance, and that notwithstanding the Favour he had in Court, the Judges must pass Sentence against him; would need put a Period to the Suit by a shorter cut, and rid himself of his Adversary, by Employing three Men to Murder him, who were his own menial Servants. A Month slipped away, ere Calphorus (so was the Wounded Person named) got out of his Bed, having all that time

been attended with as much Care as might be. The second Day after his getting up, he had the Opportunity to see me ; for my Mother was gone abroad upon a Visit, wherein I accompany'd her not, because I had a greater mind to be alone with my young Guest. He discovered himself to me so opportunely, and gave me such sensible Assurances of his Affection ; that it raised a no less in me towards him, insomuch that there passed mutual Promises of Fidelity between us. I knew nothing all this time that my Father was upon a Treaty of Marriage between me, and a Gentleman of Granada, who was infinitely desirous to enter into our Alliance ; while I was very well satisfyed, with the Choice I had made my self ; Calphorus, coming to hear of the other's Pretensions to me, was not a little troubled at it ; but the only Remedy was Patience, in regard he could make no Valuation of his Estate, till his Law-suit were ended, which he hoped would be in a short time, when he resolv'd to ask me of my Parents ; and I in the mean while kept my Father in play with Perswasions, that he would not be over-hasty in concluding my Marriage with the Granadine.

Calphorus, being perfectly cured, and requiting the Kindness and Noble Entertainment he had received at our House, with many considerable Presents ; return'd to his own Quarters, to bring his Business to a final End. For
my

my Part, my Troubles increased more and more upon me; for my Father, never giving me any notice of it, as if I had been a Person not at all concern'd, concluded the Contract with the Granadine, and pass'd his Word he should have me; which when I came to understand, I was like to die away. This new Servant of mine, who expected ere long to be my Master, came to give me a Visit: But I soon satisfy'd him, that he had reckon'd without his Hostess; for whereas he had flattered himself into a foolish Imagination, that he should have found the kindest Reception in the World from me, he met with such a Repulse, as he himself concluded, must proceed from my indifference towards him; he easily discovered, that my Refusal was the effect of some other Cause, than the Modesty, which a young Maid ought at least to pretend, upon such Occasions: And knowing withal that the Wounded Calphorus had lodged some time in our House, he presum'd, that my Disdain towards him was occasion'd by the Love I had for the other, and thence inferr'd, That not having been so happy as to prevent him in the Acquisition of my Favour; he had at best, but a hazardous After-game to recover it. The Jealousy he conceiv'd upon this Presumption, oblig'd him to make Tryal of all the ways he could imagine, to be assured of it; so as that he might not do any thing, that should cause

him afterwards to repent of: If others would do the like, it might be a means to prevent many an ill-grounded Quarrel.

I was in an extraordinary Confusion all this while, till I acquainted Calphorus with my Condition: He came to see me that very Night, and we agreed, the next, to leave my Father's-House, and go to some of his Relations, where we might be secretly Married. The expected Hour being come, (unhappy Hour to me, considering the Misfortunes I have run through since!) as my Dearest and I were going out of the House and crossing into another Street; my Jealous Servant, (who watch'd every Night to be assured of his Suspicion, which he now found to be too true) presently knew us, and attended by two Servants, he set upon Calphorus, who never dreamt of any such Matter; So that ere he had the time to draw his Sword, he receiv'd three Mortal Wounds; and fell down dead, without uttering one Word. The Noise which the Murderers had made, occasion'd the Neighbours to come out with Lights, upon the appearance whereof they ran away, fearing they might be discovered. By this time there was a great Uproar at my Father's, that I could not be found; while I was in a manner dead, to see my Dearest lying Breathless at my Feet: Having recovered my self, I considered it was to little purpose for me to stay in the Street, after
such

such an Accident : So that gathering up my Cloths, I hasted away as fast as I could, to a Friend's House of my Father's, an Aged Person and very poor ; to whom I told what had happen'd to me, and how much it concern'd me not to stay any longer at Granada. Whereupon taking a Horse he set me on him, and brought me to the next Village, where we took up another for him, and thence we are come hither, to avoid my Father, who accompany'd by Officers, makes a Search after me, as I have understood by the way. For that Reason I thought it not safe, that we should go into Sevil as soon as we came hither, but that it was better I concealed my self in some Place near it. It was the Pleasure of Fortune to direct me to this Habitation of yours, into which, upon extraordinary intreaties your Gardener ventur'd to receive me last Night.

Thus Sir, have you the Story of a wretched Maid, (if there were ever any such) whose only Comfort now is in the good Entertainment you are pleas'd to afford her. May Heaven requite your Charity, since there cannot be a greater than to relieve such as are afflicted and persecuted to that extremity as I am.

The Conclusion of this dismal Story, which *Rufina* had had the time to invent and study so well, was a shower of Crocodile-tears, which rais'd such a Compassion in *Marquino*, that he could not forbear

weeping himself. The cunning Gipsy, who notwithstanding her counterfeit Tears, observed all the Actions of *Marquino*, perceiv'd that he gave Credit to her feigned Story, and that Love began to enter at that Breach which compassion had made in his Heart. This encouraged *Rufina* to prosecute her Imposture, being now in a manner Confident to bring it to some Effect. They continued a good while together, she weeping as if she had done it for a Wager, and he endeavouring all that he could do to Comfort her ; but that Comfort came not up to the height of offering her the Remedy she could have wished, for he had not yet overcome his Covetous Humour.

Having with great Attention considered the Beauty of *Rufina*, her Affliction, and strange Adventures, and that his Happiness was as it were fallen into his Mouth ; he inferred that Heaven, as a Signal Addition to his former Happiness, had directed her to his House. This was the first Love that had ever moved *Marquino's* Heart, and in all sorts of Persons, that first Passion ever acts violently. Is *Marquino* fallen in Love ? He must needs then be Liberal : Has he entertained *Rufina* in his House ? That Kindness will be the dearest to him
that

that ever he expressed. O Love! O insinuating Passion, who dost ruin and beset Men! What Metamorphoses in them dost thou not Operate? What Disposition dost thou not change? What Resolutions dost thou not overthrow? What Felicities dost thou not disturb? And what Hearts is it not in thy Power to soften? That of this insatiable Miser, which had cast off all sense of Humanity towards his nearest Relations, Love has changed; so that he has transformed a Covetous and Sordid Person, into a Liberal and Magnificent. He is extremely taken with *Rufina*; he is passionately in Love with her; she will ere long be Mistress of his Heart and Wealth. She had said many things in her Relation, which might have betrayed her, had not the Affection, wherewith *Marquino* hearken'd to her, closed both his Eyes and Ears: Nay he was so prepossessed with his Passion, that he would have believed many other things from her, though they had been more improbable than they were.

The effect of this sad Narration of *Rufina*, was, that *Marquino* proffer'd her all the Favour and assistance she could expect from him, his Estate, Life, Heart and Soul; giving her the Title of absolute Mistress of all he was possessed of, and further entreating

treating her, of all Love, to give over thinking of her Misfortunes, and to assure her self, that she was in a House where she might Command, and that whatever she desir'd, her Orders should be obeyed, as far as it lay in his Power. *Rufina* very kindly thank'd him for so many generous Broffers, coneluding her Compliment with a fresh shower of Tears, a kind of Tempest she could raise, whenever she either pleas'd, or had occasion.

With this Artifice, she became Mistress of *Marquino*, and all he had, so as that she might dispose of him and it, as she pleas'd. Her Beauty had given him a kind of Itch, and he was mighty desirous to try whether she would be as willing to Cure him of it; but he knew not well how to acquaint her with his Indisposition. He resolv'd at last, in Case he could do no good upon her by his Submissions and Presents, to use the last Remedy, which was to Marry her. This is a Bait that many times takes the shyest of that deluded Sex; but when they are so taken, he that does it is commonly snapped himself: I before said that *Rufina* had no other Design than to examine the Chests of the greedy Merchant, and that she would not be any way engaged till she were secure of her Prize;

for

for the Slippery-trick played her by *Roberto* made her extremely Distrustful. *Marquino* stay'd all that Day in his Garden, and neglected his Business in the City ; but the next Morning betimes leaving his Guest asleep, he takes his Mule, and goes about his ordinary Occasions ; having charged the Gardener's Wife, to get a good Breakfast for the Lady, as soon as she were awake, and to have a care of the House : He lock'd the Chamber-door where his Money was, and as he went out, charg'd the Gardener not to suffer any to come into his Garden, but the old Man who had brought *Artemiza* thither ; for that was the Name the dissembling *Rufina* went by.

That done he went about his Business, attended by the little Negro, to whom he gave Money to Buy Provisions for a good Dinner. *Rufina* got up and the Gardener's Wife punctually obey'd the Orders she had received from her Master ; treating her the best she could, considering that all the Domesticks made their advaatages of those Magnificences. *Rufina* comes down after breakfast into the Garden, where she took occasion to commend the Walks, and contrivances of it ; for the Gardener kept it in very good order, and well supplied with Herbs, Fruits, and Flowers : Find-
ing

ing the Sun beginning to grow hot, she went into the House, where casually meeting with a Lute, on which *Marquino's* Factor was wont to play; she set it in Tune, and stay'd till such time as *Marquino* return'd from the City, who hearing her at it, was not a little glad to find that Perfection in her more than he knew before: Perceiving that *Marquino* hearkned to her Musick, she joyned her Voice to the Instrument, to breed one Maggot more in his Brain than he had already.

She Sung so excellently, that *Marquino* was raviſh'd at the Melody, and ſaid that it was not the Voice of a Mortal Creature but an Angel come down from Heaven: He continu'd his Attention a while, imagining ſhe would have begun another Song; but perceiving ſhe laid by the Lute, he comes into the Room and tranſported with Joy, *How has this poor Habitation been bleſt,* (ſaid he to her) *by your Acceſſion moſt adorable Artemiza? What Happineſs did the Hour of your Arrival here, bring me, who never had known any before? What Honour have I received in beholding your transcendent Beauty, and to obſerve in you from time to time, a thouſand unknown Excellencies; which are not diſcover'd at the firſt Sight? This Houſe may, no doubt, enter into Competition with Heaven*
it

it self, since such an Angel Honours it with her divine Presence ; what I say, Madam, is but little, in Comparison of the Passion I have for your Worth, which were it to be Commended proportionably to the apprehension I have of it ; I think the most Eloquent Persons that ever were, would be at a loss for Expressions suitable to so adorable a Subject.

You press too hard upon me, Dear Sir, (replies the Counterfeit Artemiza, seeming to blush at those excessive Praises) I am not such a Stranger to my self, but that I know it argues Excess in the highest degree to bestow such extraordinary Commendations, on a Person that deserves so little : Had I mistrusted your being within bearing, I would have put off my Diversion to another time ; since 'tis not unlikely my Voice may seem harsh to you, compar'd to the Excellent ones of this great City, which you often hear, unless it be, that generous Natures are apt to favour Persons of mean Parts, by flattering them by their Praises, into an Imagination, that their Endowments are greater than indeed they are. No more Compliments, I beseech you, (replies Marquino, rais'd up to the highest pitch of besotted Love) my Words come short of my Faith, and I am to assure you withal, Madam, that though I have heard excellent Voices in Sevil, (for I must confess there are some such) yet yours is infinitely

infinitely beyond any of them. Your most humble Servant, Sir, (says Rufina) your Commendations, are infinitely beyond my Deserts, and the Honour you do me can do no less than raise in me a hearty wish, That my poor Abilities might find you some further Diversion with this Instrument, since you are pleas'd to acknowledge your self so much satisfy'd therewith; but my Troubles are so great and pressing, that in what I did, I minded only to ease them. I must see them at an end, ere you leave this House, (says Marquino to her) and therefore let me intreat you, if you cannot conclude an absolute Peace with your Afflictions, at least condescend to a short Truce. These reiterations of your Favours, must needs extremely oblige me, (replies Rufina) and consequently force me to a grateful compliance with your Commands, as far as lies in my Power; but I cannot promise it you so fully as I wish; finding the Person who brought me hither, has forgotten he did it; otherwise he would have found some means to have given me a Visit once in three Days: Let not that create you any trouble, (replies the Amourous Miser) but rather imagine there may be some Cause, for his neglect. I have some apprehensions, (said she) that he may be return'd to Granada, out of a Fear that being miss'd there, he might be Questioned as an Accomplice of my Escape; and this would prove the greatest

greatest of my Misfortunes ; for if he be gone, he has carried all I had along with him. Never fear it, (says Marquino) for he must have more Compassion than to forsake you in so great an Extremity : But though he and all else fail you, assure your self, I shall not ; whereof I cannot give you a greater Assurance, than you may derive from this sincere Protestation, of my being so passionately your Servant, that I imagine not my self to be the same Person I was before I saw you. This transformation is wholly to be attributed to your Divinity, and thence you may infer the Influence you have over me.

Having so said, Marquino made an ample Discovery of his Love. The cunning Gypsie pretending she understood not his meaning, return'd only civil Answers to the Proffers he made her ; acknowledging her self extremely oblig'd to him for his Kindness, and that she doubted not of the Performance of what he was pleas'd, out of his own good Nature, to Promise. By this time Dinner was set on the Table ; they both sat down, and the Entertainment was very Noble, suitable to the Love of the Founder : For where Cupid comes once to Reign, the first Act he makes, is for the banishment of all Baseness and Avarice. *Rufina* and *Garay* had agreed together, that

that he should come to her, when he were sure the old Merchant was abroad, and that he should Disguise himself like a Beggar, that he might not be known; nor any Suspicion be conceived of him. She had Studied several ways to chouse the *Miser* of some Part of his Treasure, but could not fix on any one she thought might prove effectual; the Chamber where it was lock'd being extremely fortify'd: She had continu'd there three Days ere she had either seen or heard from *Garay*, and during the time, she express'd so great a discontent, as put *Marquino* to much Trouble; in regard it kept him from making those free Discoveries of his Love, which he would otherwise have done: In the mean time *Rufina*, who watch'd all occasions, cunningly discover'd the Place where the old Man hid the Keys of his Iron chests.

Marquino went, according to his Custom, into the City, which being observed by *Garay*, he comes to his House in Beggars weeds, as they had agreed together, with two Crutches. Being got under the Window, at which *Rufina* was looking out, he begg'd an Alms of her; she threw him down something, and ask'd him whence he came? Whereto *Garay* answering that he was of *Granada*, she seem'd to be extremely

tremely glad, and thereupon turning to the Gardiner's Wife, *Let us go down a little into the Garden,* (said she to her) *this poor fellow is come out of my Country, I would fain have some Discourse with him, to know what News he has brought thence.* The poor Woman suspecting nothing, made no difficulty to let him into the Garden. *Rufina* ask'd him how long it was since he had left *Granada*? Whereto he answering about nine or ten Days; She continu'd her Questions so long, that the Gardener's Wife weary of their Discourse, and having something else to do, left them. Being rid of her, they consider'd what was to be put in Execution the Night following, and agreed upon the Course they were to take, to possess themselves of *Marquino's* Treasure. That done, *Garay* departed, and *Rufina* went up to her Chamber, telling the Gardener's Wife, she had understood so much from that poor Fellow, concerning her Affairs, that it would not be long ere she return'd into her Country. The Gardener's Wife, and Maid were little pleas'd to hear that News; as fearing their Master would, upon her Departure, re-assume his niggardly Humour, and keep as miserable a House as he had done before; nay perhaps put himself and all the Servants to a greater Pen-
ance.

ance in their Diet, to get up what had been squander'd away during her abroad there.

Marquino being come home found *Rufina* that Night more chearful than at any time before ; which gave him the Confidence to acquaint her more freely with his Love than he had done, and to assure her of the disquiet he was in upon her Account. *Rufina* seemed not to take it amiss, nay by a greater Familiarity than she had express'd towards him before, she rais'd in him some hopes of seeing his Desires satisfyed. Whence the old Dotard began to presume, that the Fort would in a short time be taken, upon reasonable Terms: Upon this Presumption, he bestow'd on her a Ring, which he had purposely bought for her, wherein was a Diamond worth about an hundred Crowns, set about with little Rubies. The Lady gave him many thanks for so Noble a Present, and in requital promis'd him a Lesson on the Lute, to which she Sung some new Aires ; though she quarrell'd at the dulness of the Instrument. *Marquino* promis'd her a better the next Day. They parted from that time, but with different thoughts, *Marquino* desirous to obtain those Favours he expected from *Rufina*, and to oblige her thereto by Presents,

Presents, which overcome the greatest Difficulties; and *Rufina* contriving how to compass the Robbery she intended.

The next Day, *Garay* (a Person of great Experience in such Designs) got some others of the same Profession to carry on the Work, and having observed *Marquino* going into his House, they stay'd till he were gone to Bed, which was somewhat late: For *Rufina*, who held a Correspondence with them, had purposely kept him up. About Midnight, *Garay* and his Comrades brought a thing that had the Figure of a Man, stuff'd with Straw, having about him a Cloak, which cast over his Shoulder, cover'd his Face. This they pitch'd over against the principal Window towards the Garden, which was that part of the House where *Marquino* Lodg'd, and left it there fastned upright to a Stake they had thrust into the Ground. The Night was somewhat dark, and so the more proper for their Design. Having plac'd that Figure, (as I told you) they knock'd at the Door so loud that it might have been heard from one end of the Garden to the other. *Marquino* awaken'd thereby, leaps out of his Bed; it being strange to him to hear such Knocking at his Garden-door, at such an unseasonable time,

as being a thing had never happen'd to him before. He call'd up his Servant, and bid him see who Knock'd at the Door: The Servant went out between sleeping and waking, to see what the matter was, calling as loud as he could, Who knocks there? But no Body answering, and he not minding the Figure that stood in the Garden, told his Master that there was not any Body. *Marquino* upon that got into Bed again and compos'd himself to rest, but it was soon interrupted; for *Garay* knock'd more violently than he had done before, which astonish'd him the more, and oblig'd him to send down his Man a second time, to see what the matter was: Bringing his Master the same Account as he had done before, he got up himself, puts his Cloak about him; and calls at the Window, *Who knocks at my Door thus unseasonably?* Where-to no answer being made, he grew the more enraged but looking a little more earnestly about the House than his Man had done, he perceiv'd the Figure planted before his Windows. *Marquino* was extremely affraid, at the Sight of a Person, who, as he thought, knockt at his Door, yet made him no Answer; and assuming more Courage than he was naturally Master of, he said to him very loud: 'Tis
basely

basely done of you, Sir, to abuse me thus, you shall find I am not a Person to suffer it; pray keep on your way, and disturb not my rest any more if you think not you're invulnerable, and a brace of good Bullets will make no impression in your enchanted Skin.

Having made that Bravado, he shut to the Window and went to Bed; but he was hardly got warm in it, ere they began to knock more violently than they had done before; which obliged him to take a Fire-lock, which he always kept ready charged for the security of his Money. Opening the Window, he found him still in the same Posture, who would not have stirred out of it, had he not been forc'd out by some other means. *What obstinacy of Impudence is it in you, (said he to him very much incensed) to Authorize a Mischief, you are nothing the better for, in thus disturbing my Rest? 'Tis impardonable, and deserves an Exemplary Chastisement; be gone immediately from my Door, or I shall send you going the next way.* Whereupon, cocking the Fire-lock, and aiming at him, and the other never stirring, as it were out of a Presumption, that he believ'd he had not any Fire-arms, whereby he might make good his Threats: He gave him notice the third time, that he should not oblige him to offer a Violence which

which he was very unwilling to do. At last perceiving he minded not any thing he said, but as it were defy'd him, he resolv'd to give Fire, not only to fright him, but if he could to hurt him. He discharg'd off his Piece and shot the Figure, which fell to the Ground: Upon which *Garay*, who was not far off, cries out with a doleful Tone, *O God I am killed*, and immediately he and his Comrades made a great noise at the Sight of a Man so unfortunately Murdered.

Marquino extremely troubled at what he had done, it being observ'd, that Covetous Persons are for the most part Cowardly, and very much fear whatever may occasion their Losses. He shut the Window, and in a great fright awaking *Rufina*, (who had greater things to mind than Sleeping) told her what he had done. She seem'd to be extremely troubled at it, and much blam'd him, that he had executed so cruel a Resolution. For since he knew himself to be safe enough in his own House, he might have suffered them to knock at his Door, till they had been weary; that he had better have endured that Noise, and lost a little of his Rest than be in the Trouble he was in, to be the Occasion of a Man's Death. She added several other Reasons, which so confounded poor

Mar-

Marquino, that he knew not what to do. She advis'd him for his Safety, to go immediately and take Refuge in the Monastery of *St. Bernard*; it being certain, that if the Dead Person were found there the next Morning, he would be carried to Prison, as being Murdered so near his House.

Marquino was so perplexed, that he wish'd he had never been born; and it is to be imagin'd, that if *Rufina* had not been very highly concern'd to Dissemble upon this Occasion, she would have dyed with laughing. He rais'd up all his People, and told them what had happened, and all blam'd him, for his being so forward to commit such an Action, which made the poor old *Dorard* almost Mad. He imagin'd himself already apprehended, his Money carry'd away, and but a small matter between him and Hanging: At least if he were obliged by Tortures to Acknowledge his Crime, never considering that it was pardonable for one Man to kill another in his own Defence. At last he resolv'd to go to *St. Bernard's* Monastery; but knew not how to dispose of his Money. He thought it no Prudence to leave it at the discretion of his Servants; to carry it to a Friend's House (in case he had any, for

E.

Persons

Persons of his Humour have very few) he had not time. In this Distraction he desir'd *Rufina* to advise him: She seeming very much troubled, and no less fearful than he, pretended she could not tell what to advise him; but after a little pause she gave him that Advice, which she had prepared long before, and he follow'd it. She ask'd him what Money he might have in the House? He Ingenuously confessed that he had about Four thousand Crowns in Gold, and somewhat better than half the said Sum in Silver.

I tell you what Sir, I would do, were I in your Case, (says the cunning Gipsy) (since it cannot be carryed to a Friend's House without being seen) I would bury it in the Garden, in some Place, where you may afterwards find it, by some Mark you shall set to that purpose. This you must do your self, so as that your very Servants may not know any thing of it, lest they be tempted to prove false to you; for the Times are such now, that a Man must have a Care whom he trusts. I would assist you herein, and keep your Counsel, were it not that I am afraid, when the Search comes to be made, and I be left here, I shall be the first taken; and I would be loth to run my self into that hazard, having but just escaped those I have acquainted you with. In the midst of his Affliction, Marquino was troubled to perceive by his
Guest's

Guest's Discourses, the Disturbance she was in upon his Account ; and what struck him most to the heart, was, that he saw himself upon the point of losing her. This Consideration forc'd from him not only Tears, but also bitter Exclamations, against the Malicious Crossness of his Fortune. *Rufina* desired him to be of good Courage, perswading him to do as she advised him, and hope the best. So that having commanded all his Servants to go to their several Chambers, and not to stir thence; he and *Rufina*, whom only he durst trust, went to the Place where the Money was. It lay in a huge Chest, covered all over with Iron-Bars, and the Keys were so extraordinary, that it was impossible to Counterfeit them, or to get a piece thence by any other wile than what was invented by our subtil Ferret.

They first took out all the Silver, and then put the Gold into a little Box, and having brought all into the Garden, they made two holes, at some distance one from the other, in one whereof they put the Silver, and in the other the Gold; setting a Mark that they might find the Place again. *Marquino* took along with him Two hundred Crowns in Gold, and gave *Rufina* Fifty, to shift for her self, till the Business

ness was over. That done, they went up into the House, whence they might see several Persons walking with a Light; 'twas *Garay* and his Comrades, who represented the Magistrate, which *Rufina* shewing him, advised him to make all the haste he could, together with her to *St. Bernard's*. To do that, they got over the Garden-wall, as being afraid to open the Door; for they perceived the Actors of this Comedy kept a Watch there with such Authority, as if they had been really the Officers of Justice. All *Marquino's* Family followed him over the Wall, fearing they might come into Trouble for their Master's Fault. *Marquino* and his Mistress lurk'd somewhere thereabouts, till it was Day, that they might have the Church-door open to get into the Monastery. *Garay* was hard by, to see what became of *Marquino* and his People. Finding he had left his House, and got into the Monastery with *Rufina*, he went about an Hour after Sun-rising to *St. Bernard's*, in the Habit of a Secular Priest, that he might the better speak to *Rufina*. She told him how things stood, and how they had bury'd the Money in the Garden, and that it was all in Silver; concealing the Gold which She meant to reserve for her self.

Garay

Garay and one of his Comrades went next Night along with *Rufina*, Disguised in Man's Cloths to the Garden. They helped her over first, to go and see whether there might be any Body in the House, but all were vanished as if the House had been visited with the plague. She thereupon call'd *Garay* and his Companions, and having taken up the Silver, they carry'd it away, and took up their Quarters at one of the farthest Inns of the Suburbs. Having been merry a while, and drunk their own Healths, and to the good Success of their future Designs; they went all to Bed, the two Men together, and *Rufina* by her self. As soon as she found they were asleep, she puts on the same Habit, and returns to the Garden. Where, being come, she took up the little Box of Gold, and without any Disaster got safe to the Inn before her Companions awak'd.

The next Day, having divided the Silver, whereof she and *Garay* had the best Part, and sowed up the Gold in her Cloths, she left *Sevil*, taking *Garay* along with her who finding what Advantages he might make of her Company, resolved to run Fortunes with her. They took their way towards *Madrid*, to which Place they will

not be long a going, and now let us see what is become of *Marquino*, whom we left in *St. Bernard's* Monastery.

Having continued there four Days after *Rufina's* Departure from him, he knew not what to think of her that she came not again, as she had Promised. He address'd himself to one of the Monks, who had great Acquaintance in the City, and intreated him to enquire, what Proceedings there might be against him, upon the Murder he had committed. The Religious Man promised him an Account of it; but having enquired at those Places where he thought he might most probably hear; no body could give him any Satisfaction. He thereupon told *Marquino*, that he might safely go abroad, and needed not to fear any thing. He went out one Night to a Friend of his, whom he acquainted with all that had past, as also the great perplexity he was in; desiring him to make a more particular enquiry into the Business, than he thought the Religious Man had done. He did so, and gave him the same Account as the other. Yet would not that satisfy him, but he must Desire his Friend to go to his House, whereof he gave him the Master key. At his Request he went, and found it without any Body in

in it, and his Mule dead for want of Meat, and Attendance. His Friend returned to him with this News, and advised him to come out of the Monastery, and go home, and thence about the City, as he was wont to do.

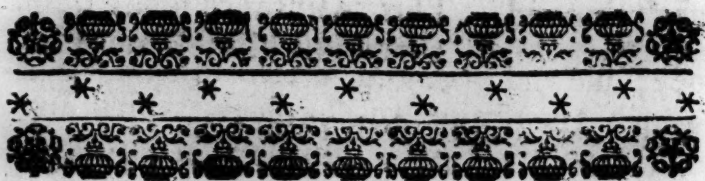
The Death of his Mule troubled him not much, so glad was he to find himself once more at Liberty: The only thing that gave him any Disquiet, was, that his *Artemiza* (under which Name *Rufina* went) came not to see him: But he imagined the Occasion of it might be, that being a young Maid, she had sheltered her self some where, to keep out of the Hands of Justice, or that perhaps she might have been met with by her Father, who, as she had told him, sought after her. He went to his House, whither soon after, came the Gardener and his Wife, and his other Servants. He goes into the Garden, and, notwithstanding all the Fear and Distraction he had been in, remembered the Place where he had hid his Money, and was not a little glad to find the Mark where he had set it: So that before he went to Bed, he resolved to secure his Treasure in its former Garrison. As soon as it was dark, he takes the Gardener with him, and a Lantern and Candle, and goes first to the

Place, where the Silver was, and bids him dig. He did so, but there was nothing to be found ; whereat, *Marquino* was extremely surprized. He went thence to the Place where they had laid the Gold, and there they found as little ; only *Rufina* knew what was become of all. He walked several turns about the Garden, with much Vexation ; imagining the Marks, might be misplaced : But what in looking after the Marks, and what in digging, the Night slipp'd away ; so that at last despairing to find any thing that Night, he behav'd himself like a Person distracted. The Gardener knew not what he looked for, not for what Reason he had brought him thither. The poor Man resolv'd to have a little Patience till the next Morning ; being still in some hopes to find what he had hidden.

He went to Bed, or rather to spend the Night in insufferable Torments ; but as soon as it began to dawn, he got up, and having called up the Gardener, they return'd to the Work they had been at the Night before. Having digged again at those Places, where he was Confident he had laid the Money ; all they could find was, that there had been two Holes made there before, and that Money or something

thing else had been hidden there, but all was removed. This Assurance made him run stark Mad, throwing himself on the Ground, running his Head against the Wall, and doing such things as raised a Compassion in his Servants; who thence concluded that he had lost his Money, and suspected the feigned *Artemiza*, to have robb'd him, by the Orders he gave them to search after her all over the City. But she was far enough out of his reach, and had so well secured his Money; that it was not likely it would come into his Chests any more. He kept his Bed a good while, out of pure Madness, that he had so soon lost, what had Cost him so many Years Trouble and Pains to get together. The Robbery was soon divulged all over the City: Some who knew not his Humour pity'd his Misfortune, but such as had Experience of his insatiable Avarice were not a little pleased to find him so justly punished.

The End of the First Book.



THE
Pole-Cat
OF
SEVILLE.

Book the Second.



AS soon as *Rufina* had done her Work at *Marquino's*, and had made a broken Merchant of one, who was accounted the Wealthiest about *Sevil*; she thought it not Prudent to make any long Stay, for fear of falling into the Hands of Justice, whose Officers would be abroad, upon the Solicitations of the Party Robbed. She was

was gone far enough out of the way, ere he was sensible of his Loss; for the next Night after they had taken away the Money, she and *Garay* hir'd two Mules, upon which they came to *Carmona*, which lies about half a Day's Journey from *Sevil*. They had taken up two Places in the *Madrid*-Coach, which was to pass through that City, and take them up as it went. They alighted at *Carmona*, at one of the best Inns, where *Rufina*, keeping out of Sight, was resolved to expect the Coach, considering with her self, what she might come to in time, seeing, she was now already Mistress of Four thousand Crowns in Gold, in good double Pistoles and Quadruples, which was all that penurious Merchant had gotten together, during his whole Life, with much pains taking, and many a hazardous Venture into the most remote Climates. And herein, you may behold, the exemplary Punishment, which many times happens to those Miserable Wretches, who become the Slaves of their own Wealth. And what infinitely adds to their Misfortune, is, that People are more apt to rejoyce at it than bemoan it: For how can they expect that others should entertain any Kindness for them, when they themselves have not any but for what they

they lay up in their Chests? *Rufina* therefore impatiently expected the Coach which was to carry her to *Madrid*, there to live at her Ease, with the booty she had got, hoping to be there as in a great Sea which received all the World.

The Coach came at its usual time to *Carmona*. There were in it already six Persons: A Gentleman, and his Lady, a Priest, two University-scholars, a Servant belonging to the Priest, and a young Lad about fifteen Years of Age. They all knew, that there were two Persons to be taken in at *Carmona*, who had pay'd somewhat extraordinary for the best Places: They accordingly resign'd them as soon as they perceiv'd their coming towards the Coach: *Garay*, who was a very Civil and Obliging Person, would needs recommend his interest in the Place to the Gentleman's Lady, whom he seated on the left side of *Rufina*, and sat himself in the fore-part of the Coach with her Husband.

All being placed to their Content, they left *Carmona* on the *Monday* Morning; it being in *September*, when most Fruits are ripe. All thought it a great happiness, that they had met so good Company; but *Rufina* and *Garay* had another secret Satisfaction, arising from the thought of the
good

good Prize that had brought them into that good Company. The Gentleman was a Person of Excellent Discourse, the Priest of a very Sociable and Jovial Humour, and the two Young Scholars made it appear, that they had not mispent their time at the University; every one being desirous to make the best Discoveries he could of his Abilities. The Priest took occasion to inform them that he was going to Court, to get a Privilege, to put two little Pieces of his into the Press, being such as (some Friends of his had assured him) he should oblige the World in the Publication of. The Gentleman, who sat next him, was a Person acquainted with Letters, and they express'd a great Curiosity to know what they might treat of. Doctor *Manksalvo*, (so was the Priest called) told him they were Books of pleasant Dialogues and Stories; representing to him, that things of that kind, were kindly received at Court; that one of them contain'd several *Novels*, and the other a Collection of *Poems* Written by him, during his Residence at *Salamanca*. He told them withal, that if they thought it not tedious, he would entertain them with somewhat out of the former, whenever they should be at leisure to give him Attention.

Rufina,

Rufina, who was a great Lover and Reader of such pieces, intreated the Doctor, if it were no trouble to him, to read one of his *Novels*; promising her self, from the assurance she had of his Excellent Parts, that the Style, and Conceptions would be answerable to the Worthiness of the Author. *I have endeavour'd all I could, Madam,* (says the Doctor to her) *to conform my self to the Style now us'd at Court: My Prose is free from Affectation, and consequently, will not weary the Reader, nor are the Conceits so flat as to produce that Effect. I make it my Business to give my Writings that Life and Smartness, which may raise in the Reader an Earnestness to know the Period of the Adventures. I Write as I speak, because I see Men love those things that are Natural, better than those which smell of too much Study, and Affectation. And take it from me as a thing very certain, That it requires a certain measure of Confidence for any Man to Write, as the times go now; which proceeds hence, that so many Excellent Wits busy themselves in Writing, and Publish things as Admirable as Ingenious, and not only Men, who profess Letters, but also some Women.* The Doctor having ended this Discourse, took out his Book of *Novels*, and the Company having compos'd themselves to Silence, and
Attention;

Attention; he entertain'd them with that which follows.

Valentia, one of the most Eminent Cities of *Spain*, the Nurse of so many good Families, the Center of Ingenious Spirits, and the sacred Receptacle of the Bodies of divers Saints, gave Birth unto *Don Principio*, a Person of Noble Extraction, Young, and Master of all those Excellent Qualities, for which Men are either lov'd or admired.

Having left his Country about twelve years before, in the Company of an Uncle of his, who had the Command of a Troop of Horse in *Flanders*; he behav'd himself with so much Gallantry in those Parts, that he was in a short time advanc'd to be Cornet, under his Uncle, who dying, he supply'd his Place, and so continu'd twelve years in the Service of his Catholick Majesty, *Philip* the Third, against the revolted Provinces of the Low-Countries. He was at last in Compensation of his Services, Honoured with the Order of *St. James*, with the ordinary Allowances belonging thereto.

During that part of the year, which makes a kind of Cessation of Arms in those colder Countries, his abroad was in the City of *Antwerp*, where, by certain Letters

ters from *Valentia*, he receiv'd the News of his Father's Death, which made him, being the eldest Son, Heir of a very considerable Estate. He might indeed now have lived plentifully on his own, and pursued his Pleasures, as many other young Cavaliers did, who place all the Felicity of this Life in the Infamous Enjoyments thereof: But he, a Dutiful Son of Honour, chose rather to continue the Exercises of War, and serve his Country, than by a sudden Exchange of Enjoyments, to blast his Reputation, and incurr the Reproach of a Person impatient of Hardship, and guilty of Effeminacy. This Consideration discovers him to be much more staid than those young Gentlemen, who prefer whole Skins, the shameful Blandishments of Ease, and the warmth of their own Fires, before the Honour, which a Person truly deserving that Name should endeavour to purchase in the Service of his Prince.

But *Don Principio* considering withal, that he could not, upon this News of his Father's Death avoid taking a Journey to *Valentia*, to order the Disposal of his Estate; he desir'd leave to do it, of his most Serene Highness the Arch-Duke *Albert*, who finding the just Occasion he had to go, easily

easily condescended, proffering him, at his return, what Advancement he could reasonably expect; which oblig'd him to make the more earnest Promises to come back into *Flanders*, contrary to the Presumptions of many, who imagin'd that he had made an Exit from the Military Stage, thence-forward to follow the more pleasant Divertisements of a Civil Life.

Being come to *Valentia*, where his Relations and Friends kindly entertain'd him, he began to order the Management of his Affairs, not trifling away his time in unprofitable Diversions, whereto young Men, are but too much addicted. For though he were a Soldier, yet was he no Lover of Gaming, a Disposition for which he was much to be commended, considering his Age and Quality: In as much as Gaming Occasions a thousand Misfortunes, and unhappy Accidents, whereof there had happen'd not a few at *Valentia*. Nor was *Don Principio* as yet any way inclin'd to Love, though he could not want Occasions to express his Courtship, and to shew how far he had studied the Mysteries of Love and Eloquence; since what added much to the Lustre of that City, was the great number of fair Ladies, shining in it like so many Stars; but his most ordinary Employment

was

was the Exercising of his Horses. Of these he had four Excellent ones extremely well manag'd ; which he had bought in *Andaluzia*, and one which he rode a hunting the Bulls, according to the Custom of the Country ; shewing himself, at that Sport, more dextrous than all those who were accounted the Bravest in the City.

'Tis a Custom in *Valentia*, that in the beginning of the Spring, for the space of about Fifteen Days together, most of the Families of the City go about the Silk-Husbandry, which they have in the adjacent Villages. One Day, *Don Principio* rid abroad into the Country, through that delightful Plain, which is near a Garden not far from *Valentia*, known by the Name of the Monastery of our *Lady of Hope* ; And having spent the whole Afternoon about those pleasant Gardens, refreshing himself with the sweet Scent of the Flowers of the Orange-Trees, whereof there is good Store, thereabouts ; (the Sun being so far declin'd, that it seem'd to be equally divided between us and our Antipodes) he pass'd by a Country-house, not far from the pleasant River of *Turia*, where he heard, at a small distance, one playing on a Lute, so well, that he thought he had not heard any Musick comparable to it.

it before. He stopp'd his Horse, imagining the Person playing on that Instrument so excellently, might also sing to it. He expected a while with much Impatience; but the Musicians putting the Instrument into several different Tunes, did not what he so much desir'd, which was to hear her Voice. In the mean time Night came on, and *Don Principio* extremely delighted with the Place he was in, gave his Horse to his Laquey, and commanding him a little distance off, he staid alone, under the green Balcony, whence the Musick came, to find out who made it. But he had not waited long, e're he could perceive, by the light of the Moon, that it was a Lady, who being got into that Balcony to take the Advantage of a gentle Wind then blowing, began a-fresh her delightful Musick on the Lute, whereto she joyn'd that of an admirable Voice; singing an Air which made an absolute Conquest of that Heart, wherein all the Hardships of War had not made the least Breach. Whence we may deduce this Remark, that *Cupid* can do more in a Minute, than *Mars* in a *Troy-Siege*. To say the same thing again in other Words, the Excellency of the Voice, and the transcendent Nimbleness of the Hand; the Compliance

pliance and Competition between them, so ravish'd our young Gallant; that he wish'd she might never give over, at least not till he were satiated with that Pleasure. But the Lady laid by her Instrument, and leaning her Breast on the Balcony, though 'twere Night, made a shift to see the young Gallant, whom her Musick had charm'd so long his Ears; who also perceiving her, would needs make his Advantage of so blest an Opportunity. So that getting as near as he could he broke forth into his Compliment.

How infinitely happy must that absent Gentleman be, Madam, (for in the Verses she sung she bemoan'd the Absence of a certain Person) who deserves so Excellent a Voice to bemoan his Absence! I should be extremely glad of his Acquainttne, that I might give him an Account of this good News, that he is so obligingly bemoan'd by so deserving a Lady as you seem to be.

The Lady wondred to find her self thus address'd to, but recovering out of her Astonishment, though she knew not the Person who had spoken to her, yet she gave him this Answer. *As to the Song you heard, Sir, you are not to imagine it Sung out of any tenderness I have for some Person now far from me, and therefore you may spare your self*
that

that trouble of making any Enquiry who it is, and consequently of informing him how highly he is in my Favour, as you imagine. What assurance can I have of that, (says Principio) knowing, by what I have heard from your own Mouth, the predominant Passion of your Soul? How, I pray Sir, may you be concern'd in that? (said she to him.) Very much, (reply'd he) for the Enchantment of your Voice has been so powerful over him who has heard it, that it is not without Reason he requires Assurances of what he asks you, to prevent the Disquiet, which he must otherwise expect.

She could not forbear laughing at this Discourse of Don Principio, and told him withal, that Women do prudently, when they are Flatter'd, not to believe any thing that Men say to them, in regard they never speak Truth, representing things, not as they really are, but as they appear to their beguil'd Imaginations.

Wherein, I beseech you, (says Principio) do you think, Madam, that I have told you any thing short of Truth? Mistake me not, (reply'd she) I don't charge you with a coming short, but going much beyond it: For you are so Prodigal of your Commendations of a Person you are very little acquainted with, nay, have not so much as well viewed; that you must

must either laugh at my Simplicity, or think me a great Admirer of my self, if I should credit what you say. To convince you of either your Errour or palpable Flattery, of many, I need only give you this one Instance; that, when I my self, and others whose Judgments I dare trust, think I do not sing tolerably well, you would make me believe, that my Voice has raised you into Extasies, when another would not have a Minute's Patience to hear me. Nay, Madam, (reply'd Principio) take heed your Reproaches rebound not upon your self, disparage not your self so far, and slight not Truth so much as to call her by any other Name than her own: You have an admirable Voice, and the Subject of the Words you sung must needs be such; since it is not to be imagin'd you sung them in vain. To make them Perfect, there needs only the mixture of a little Jealousy, were it not that the happy Man, upon whose account those Words were made, knowing your Worth, cannot give you any.

Upon this, the Lady remov'd from the Place where she was, that she might more commodiously proceed in her Discourse with Don Principio, (though she knew him not) for she imagin'd he could not talk at that rate without some ground; which made her say to him, *If you make any Comparison between that Enchantment you speak of,*
and

and the suspicion you seem to have, I can assure you, that you are very well read in the *Art of Flattery*; and therefore, I beseech you, attribute not a *Melancholy* humour, I am subject to, to any *Regret* occasion'd by the absence of any Person; for I was never yet troubled with any such thing, and I think, shall not as long as I live. I would give all I am worth in the *World*, (says he) conditionally, what you say were true. Would your hazard be very great in that? (reply'd she.) Very little, (said he) considering the account upon which I profer it; but I should say no less, were I possess'd of all the *World*, and think it well bestow'd. I am extremely happy, (answers the Lady) to hear things so highly spoken to my *Advantage*; but I should be transcendently vain, to imagine I should raise *Love* in any Person, before I am seen by him: Nay I dare promise you, that if you had seen my *Face*, you would not, perhaps be so resolute. My bearing cannot deceive me, (reply'd he) and I presume, that the Person, who is so excellent to satisfy that *auricular Part*, may be the like in other *Curiosities*, which the envious *Night* permits me not a *View* of at present. And when you consider, That in the *Discourse* I have had with you, I have not talk'd of *Beams*, nor *Splendour*, nor us'd those *Expressions*, which they seem to have studied, who with affected *Hyperboles*, make it

it their business to flatter, and abuse Ladies; you should in some measure assure your self, that I begin to conceive an unfeigned Passion for you.

Well to humour you a little, (says she) I have some Inclination to believe you, which will be much confirm'd, if you tell me who you are. I have a desire, (said he to her) first to deserve it by my Services, that in case there may be any thing wanting in me, as to *Quality*, those I hope to render you, may supply the Defect.

Nay, then I am satisf'd, (said she) that you are a Person of *Quality*, when you have such a distrust of your self. Pardon me, that I am forc'd to leave you; for I hear my self call'd to receive some Company newly come into the House, and if I should not immediately be gone, some would come and find me here: Do me the Favour then (says Principio) to give me leave to wait on you here to Morrow at this time. I know not whether it may be in my power, (said she to him) however, do you not fail to come hither; and though something may prevent my giving you the Meeting, yet shall I think my self very much oblig'd to you. I shall infallibly expect you, (replies the Enamour'd Gallant) more fix'd in my Resolution, than the Stars, you see, are in the Firmament. Your last Words, (reply'd she)

If

if I cannot sleep to Night, will find my Thoughts a Diversion to deceive the dull Season; but when you come next, I beseech you, be not so liberal of your Hyperboles; Methinks they grate the Ear, and I think all that use them great Flatterers, and consequently, no great Honourers of Truth; especially considering, how meanly I deserve.

Having said this, and given him a very obliging Salute, she got out of the Balcony; leaving *Principio* in a little Disturbance, to see that she left him so soon; for he was extremely taken, as well with the Excellency of her Voice, as that of her Discourse: He had a great desire to know who she was, and she had the same Curiosity concerning him. For she immediately commanded a Servant to follow him, and not to return till he had discover'd who he was, which he did, without much trouble; inasmuch, as not far from thence, he saw him get up on Horse-back, and knew him, and presently return'd with News to his Mistress, who was overjoy'd to hear it was *Don Principio*; of whom she had heard such Noble things, and seen behave himself so gallantly, at the Hunting of the Bulls.

Don Principio being come home, enquir'd of a Neighbour of his, who that

F

Lady

Lady might be, to whom he had spoken, and describing to him the Place where she liv'd, he understood, her Name was *Donna Julietta*, (the Sir-name for some reason I shall omit) a Lady of great repute in the City, and of extraordinary Endowments, whose Understanding was equal to her Beauty, Daughter to one *Don Speranza Lopez*, a Person of great Fame, for his long Service in the Wars; who having quitted the Military Life, and Married, well advanc'd in Years, had left that Fair Daughter, who was then Fatherless, and Motherless, with a very inconsiderable Fortune; in regard her Father's Estate consisted most in Pensions bestow'd on him by King *Philip* the Second, in requital of his Services. This Lady liv'd with an Aunt of hers, an Ancient Gentlewoman, who for the most part kept her Bed, and was then retir'd to that Country-house, to look after her Silk-husbandry.

Thus was *Principio* fully inform'd of all he desir'd to know; and had a particular Account of the Perfections, which made the City of *Valentia* full of Discourses of her Beauty, and Wit, which was such, that she had the Reputation of Writing good Verses, a Property very commendable in a Person of her Sex and Quality.

Principio

Principio had never seen her, and understanding she liv'd at that Country-house, his Desire was the more inflam'd; which made him ride abroad the oftener, hoping to be favour'd with such another Opportunity, as he had met with before; but he had not that Happiness a good while; her Aunt being so sick, that she could not stir out of the Room where she lay. About Fifteen Days afterwards, the Old Gentlewoman being a little recover'd, she had the liberty to go and see the Procession of a Nun, at the Royal Monastery of *Zaida*, which was not far from the Country-house; at which Ceremony, all the Gallants of *Valentia*, of both Sexes, were present. *Donna Julietta* came thither also, but having her Face cover'd with her Mantle, and attended only by one of her Women, she got into a little obscure Chappel.

Principio on the other side, who fail'd not to be there, hoping to meet her on whom he had fasten'd his Affections, wondring very much that he found her not among the other Ladies; and suspecting she might be one of those who were retir'd into the Chappel, and had their Faces cover'd with their Mantles, he went in to them, with two other Friends, to whom

He said, (presuming it was she as soon as he saw her) *The new made Nun is not much oblig'd to these Ladies, who retire to a Place, where they cannot see those Ceremonies which all the rest are so desirous to behold: But I attribute this indifference to the little inclination they have to become Nuns. Julietta was not a little pleas'd to see Principio, whom she had before observ'd in the Church, and wish'd not so well attended as he then was. However, changing her Voice, she return'd him this Answer.*

Being not invited to this Festival, we cannot expect the same Welcome as those that are; and for the little Curiosity we discover to see the Ceremonies us'd, at the Reception of a Nun, having seen the like several times before, we do not much mind this in regard the seeing of it but once, is enough to satisfy a Person inclinable to be a Nun. Nay, then I see, (says one of Principio's Friends) you are not one of their Number, who have a Desire to enter into that Profession. I have no answer to make to you as to that, (reply'd she) only to give you my Sentiments; that a person cannot enter into this State of Life, unless they are called to it by Heaven; a Favour I do not yet find my self to be worthy of. We may then (reply'd Principio) infer from this Discourse
of

of yours; that you are not *Marry'd*, but desirous to be so: What my Inclinations are, as to *Marriage*, (said she) I am not oblig'd to give you an *Account*, who are very far from being related to me so nearly, as that I should acquaint you with my Resolution in a *Business* of that Concernment: However, you may satisfy us so far, *Madam*, (says *Principio*) as to let us know, which Condition of *Life* you would rather chuse. Which, I pray, *Sir*, would you advise me to? (says she to him.) That of *Matrimony*, (says *Principio*.) What, whether I have the *Accommodations* requisite to enter into that State, or not? (reply'd she.) If all be wanting, (says he to her) you must endeavour to forget your self; for she who is not born to be a *Nun*, and cannot be *Married*, must remain *Neuter*, as being incapable of both. I could very well follow that *Advice*, (said she.) But if you please *Madam*, (says *Principio*) to discover what your *Mantle* permits us not to see, I will give you better *Advice*.

Coming up nearer to her, as if he were confident of that Favour, she met his Desires, and purposely gave him a full View of one of her fair Eyes, which *Principio's* two Friends also took notice of. If the *Advice* you intend to give me, (said she) should prove to my disadvantage, 'twere better,

I should still continue undiscover'd, though to hear your Advice, I should not think it much to answer your Expectation. That can do you no prejudice, (says Principio to her) in regard we have observ'd some things which assure us, that you ought to chuse the State of Matrimony, in which you would make the Person you should think worthy your Enjoyment, the Happiest Man in the World: Nay e're I know any more of you than I do already, I wish my self the Person, for whom that Felicity is reserv'd.

His two Friends affirm'd the same thing on their own behalf, being extremely satisfied with her Wit, and the little they had seen of her Face.

Can there be any Happiness comparable to mine (said she) who have three such handsom Persons at my Devotion, of whom it is in my Power to make one the Happiest Man in the World? Well Gentlemen, since you cannot expect I should make a sudden Choice in a Business of this Concern, you will give me leave to examine your several Perfections, that I may pitch upon him, who in my Judgment, may pretend to most.

Upon that every one began to Celebrate his own Worth, and undervalue his Competitors: They pass'd away sometime in that pleasant Discourse, without any Offence

Offence taken; though the Place they were in should have minded them, that some other Conversation would have been more suitable. But the young fellows of this age have no regard to any thing, but make the same use of a Church, as of a Tradesman's Shop to the great Scandal of Religion. The Lady having had the Patience to hear what every one had to say on his own behalf; she Answer'd them all together thus: *I am fully inform'd of the Qualities, and Deserts of Persons every way so excellent: I am now to advise with my Pillow, which of the three I should prefer; though, to tell you the truth, I have, in a manner resolv'd upon my Choice already; finding in myself a stronger Inclination for one of the three, than for either of the other two. The Person I mean, has many excellent Qualities, but the particular inducement I have to think him Worthy my Approbation, is, that I know him to be a very great Wit; all I have to object against him, is, that he fears I am already engag'd to some other, whence I infer he is Jealous, and consequently of an ill Nature. Principio immediately apprehended the spoke of him, reflecting on what had past in their Discourse the first time he had seen her.*

The time being come for people to go out of the Church; the three Lovers out-vy'd one the other, to find out passionate Compliments to take leave of the Lady: *Principio* purposely staying to be the last, only to whisper these Words to her, 'Tis too great a Tyranny, *Madam*, towards a Servant so passionately yours, in so long a time, not to vouchsafe him a full Sight of you. I beseech you be more kind to him hereafter, least your further Disdain may have some fatal effects on him. The indisposition of an Aunt, (reply'd she) whom I must constantly attend, I hope, you will think an allowable excuse; and what I tell you is much more true, than the Expressions you make to me of your Love; but I will endeavour your satisfaction, and put a Period to your Complaints, when possibly you least expect it. *Principio* had not the time to return her any Answer, and so he parted from her, leaving her deeply in Love, and extremely desirous to discourse with him more at Leisure.

Some few Days after, Fortune favour'd her with an Opportunity to her own Wishes, at the same Balcony where he had spoken to her the first time. As soon as she perceiv'd *Principio* she came down, and they discours'd a long time together, without any Interruption. The Effect of
this

this Interview and long Conference, upon *Principio*, was, that his Love, which before was little better than kindled, now broke forth into a Flame. *Fulietta* came not much behind him, yet had that command of her Passion, as not to grant him the greatest Kindness that can happen between Persons of different Sexes; though it were out of this only Reflection, that to have done it, at the first Interview, would have argu'd such a Compliance and easiness of Nature, as no violence of Affection should ever be able to excuse.

Principio, being now fully satisfi'd that *Fulietta* was both a great Wit, and a great Beauty, writ several Love-letters to her; and the better to express his Passion, he also sent her some Verses of his own Composure. *Fulietta* knew not that *Principio* among so many other Qualities he had acquir'd, was also skilful in Poetry, and consequently was the more surpriz'd and satisfi'd therewith: Some of his Missives she very modestly answer'd in these Terms.

The Letter.

THose Commendations, which transcend the Merit of the Person, on whom they are bestow'd, do rather Injure than Oblige, and disparage the Judgment of the Giver ; inas-much as the Receiver, thinking her self unworthy the Honour, justly takes the Elogy for a Satyr. I am not so much a stranger to my self, but that I can distinguish between Flattery and Truth ; nor am I so poorly conceited of my self, but that I think I deserve somewhat of the Praises you give me. I shall think it an Obligation, if you abate some part of what you tell me, and find out a mean between excessive Praises and Contempt ; for the former my own Imperfections advise me to look on as an Abuse ; I have no great Experience of your Disposition, and therefore think it not strange, if I give not the Credit you expect to your Poetry, because it is the Language of Fiction ; nor yet to your Prose, because it proceeds from the same Author, who, 'tis very likely has read Romances. Whether they were the Dictates of a sincere Affection, or an Obliging Compliment, it is only in the Power of time to discover, and withal to assure me, whether I am to acknowledge your Civilities, or resent the Injuries you have done me.

The

The Fair *Julietta* found out an Expedient to convey this Letter into the Hands of *Don Principio*, her newly caught Gallant, who, desirous to set himself right in the Opinion of his Mistress, and to assure her of the Fluency of his Style in things of this kind, caus'd the Messenger to stay, and take along with him this Answer.

The Answer.

I See, then, *Madam*, so that you procure your own Satisfaction, your care not what Inconveniences I may run into; since to be more moderate in your Praises (as you seem to Desire) cannot be without so much the greater prejudice to my Reputation; in that I think myself far short of Transcendency in that particular, and I am forc'd to bring in the excess of my Love, to supply the defects of my Poetry: That I may therefore be no more guilty of such a Crime, I will henceforth express my self in Prose, and in some measure do what you Command me in your Letter. You will find it no great difficulty to believe me, if you were sensible what I feel; nay though out of Modesty you pretend to be Ignorant of it, I defy you to do it; unless withal you resolve never to Consult your Glass any more. Well, *Madam*, it may be the time of your Conversion is not yet;

yet come; when it shall, your Eyes will be opened, and you shall find, That of all the Hearts, subdu'd by the Charms of your Beauty, mine perhaps may be the least, but, withal the most passionate Captive. Time, which gives all things their Birth, Perfection, and Period, shall be the Touch-stone to try whether this be Truth or Fiction; nay I leave it to the same old Gentleman to assure you of a thing, you yet pretend to be Ignorant of, which is, That, while I live, you shall be sole Sovereign Mistress and Directress of my Inclinations; and then perhaps good Nature, Gratitude, and Generosity, will rather advise you to acknowledgements of the Love I bear you, than a resentment of the Injuries you charge me withal.

This Letter gave *Fulietta* that Satisfaction concerning her new Gallant, which she expected: The frequent Visits were continu'd on *Principio's* side, and the Epistolary Correspondence on both sides: So that the Inclination they had one to another, were by these degrees heightn'd into a Noble flame of Mutual Love: His Mistress commanded him above all things to keep his Pretensions to her, very Secret, which he inviolably Promis'd to do; nay she was so scrupulous, as to that particular,

ticular, that if in the Church, or some o-
 ther publick Place, her Gallant did so
 much as cast his Eye on her, in the Com-
 pany of some Friend, she immediately
 imagin'd, that he acquainted him with his
 Passion; and as if she had heard all their
 Discourse, she fail'd not to send him a
 Letter concerning it, if she could not see
 him time enough, that he might receive
 her Reproaches himself. *Principio* clear'd
 himself the best he could, still assuring her
 of the contrary; and inflam'd with Love
 and Indignation, all he could do was to
 dispel that Diffidence, which troubl'd him
 extremely; but the same Love, which is
 wont to reconcile the lesser Differences
 and Dissatisfactions, that happen between
 Lovers, help'd them also out of the
 greatest and most difficult. 'Twas *Prin-*
cipio's design to Mary this Lady, though
 her Fortunes were very low; but he de-
 lay'd the doing it, till he had effected a
 Business he was then engag'd to prosecute.
 His Uncle and himself had done the King
 very considerable Services in *Flanders*, for
 many years together, and he was then
 making his applications to his Majesty for
 some Command in compensation thereof;
 and the obstructions and delays he met
 with in that Affair contributed more to
 his

his after-happiness, than the Expedition could have done, as will appear anon.

Julietta had given Order, that he should not be seen in the Street where she liv'd, much less look up to her Window to be seen by her, and it was punctually observ'd by *Principio*, who was not known to have given her a Meeting any where ; but she her-self was the first that forgot what she had enjoyn'd ; it happen'd thus : During the time of the Carnaval, which in *Valentia*, is Celebrated with Masquerades, Balls, Tiltings, and Disguises, *Principio* had in some of these met with his Mistress ; yet without discovery of more than ordinary Kindness between them though they had talk'd, and danc'd together. One Evening after the Ball, there was to be a Meeting of certain Ladies, at the House of a Friend of *Julietta's*, to which she with some others had been invited : *Principio* and some other Friends of his were to be there, not in order to any Ball, but only to discourse : *Julietta* came there betimes before any of the rest, and soon after her a Woman, very sumptuously attir'd, attended by two Gentlemen-Ushers of her own Retinue, whom her Mother had order'd to wait on her,

to

(III)

to that Neighbour's House, who was very much her Friend. *Principio* coming into the Room, was very kindly receiv'd by the Ladies then present, whom he endeavour'd to entertain the most agreeably he could, till the rest of the Company were come in.

The Lady who came in last, rose from her Seat to go and look upon a Piece of Tapistry, that was in the Room, wherein there were represented lighted Torches : The Admiration she express'd at the Excellency of the Workmanship oblig'd *Principio* to come also to see it ; there was Pen, Ink, and Paper upon the Table. *Lucretia*, (so was the Lady call'd) took the Pen in her Hand, and drew several strokes upon the Paper : *Principio* took occasion to commend all she did with such high Compliments, that his Mistress, who was already possess'd with a Jealousy, to see him so near her, was almost ready to burst with Indignation to hear them. He minding only his own Diversion in all he did, took no notice of it ; nay on the contrary, being acquainted with *Lucretia*, through her Brother's means, whom he often visited, and a Person of much freedom in his Behaviour, he continu'd his Gamesome Humour, and snatched out of her Hand a
Pen.

Pen she was making to Write withal ; after which having dash'd a little Ink upon her Hand, he Jestingly told her, that the Blackness of the Ink never appear'd more than it did then. She pretending to be displeas'd at that Freedom, gave him a clap upon his Shoulder with her Hand, to get off the Ink ; but perceiving he laugh'd at the Revenge she had taken, she gave him another harder than the former.

Julietta who minded their Jestings more than what was said to her by the Mistress of the House, (with whom she was then discoursing) starts like a Fury from her Seat, and not considering what she was a doing ; gave *Principio* such a Blow over the Face, that his Nose bled : The poor Gentleman was extremely startled at it, and all he could do was to take a Handkerchief out of his Pocket, to receive the Blood ; telling his Mistress, very coldly, *Well, Madam, you see I have kept the Secret committed to my trust ; you have first reveal'd it and transgress'd the Law you have made your self :* Concluding this Reproach with a low Bow, he quitted the Room, and went home.

Julietta, had no sooner given the Blow, but she was infinitely troubled at it, not
so

so much out of the Respect she bore to the Mistress of the House, who was her intimate Friend ; as for her, who had occasion'd her Jealousy. In this Interval, her Sisters, upon whose Account this Meeting had been appointed, coming into the House, *Julietta* had the Opportunity to retire with her Friends into another Room.

Being got together, only they two, *My dearest Julietta*, (says her Friend to her) *What do you think of ? How are you grown another Person than what I have ever known you ? I have hitherto admir'd your Modesty and Reservedness ; how you should now be guilty of such a miscarriage in Behaviour, is the Matter of my Astonishment. The Action you have done, assures me, without your speaking, what in many Words, you should hardly have perswaded me to. I was Ignorant of this Affection of yours, because you ever kept it secret ; and since I know it by this Discovery, I am more oblig'd to your Jealousy, than your Friendship. Principio is a Person of Worth, and Quality ; I am wery glad he is your Servant, you may henceforward publicly own him, for it is to no purpose to dissemble.*

Julietta was at such a loss, that she knew not what to answer ; but having a little recover'd

recover'd her self, *I must acknowledge, dear Madam, (reply'd she) since this eruption of my Jealousy and Indignation, has betray'd me, that Principio is my humble Servant; my inconsiderate Passion, has, to my Shame, discover'd what I kept not only from your Knowledge, but that of all others. I must acknowledge, I say, that Principio serves me with a violent Passion, which yet exceeds not the Affection I have for him. I never saw him so indifferent, as he discover'd himself in this last Action; his familiarity with Lucretia touch'd me to the quick. That short Fury, (which we commonly call Jealousy) forc'd me to that extravagant discovery of my Love. Since what is past cannot be recall'd, (said her Friend to her) let us find out some Remedy, to alleviate the Inconvenience; for it is not fit we should be depriv'd of Principio's good Company, nor be of the Pleasure of this Meeting. Besides, we should not give Lucretia the time to make any Reflection on this Accident, or conceive Apprehensions which would prove disadvantageous to you. What is to be done in this Conjunction? (reply'd the Jealous Lady) The only way I can think of, (says her Friend) is, immediately to write to him. She follow'd her Advice, and sent him these Lines.*

The

The Letter.

J Jealousies, when they are really the Effects of Love, though expressed with some harshness, are rather to be accounted Favours than Affronts, by a Lover, whose Soul exhales a sincere Passion towards his Mistress. The Injury I have done my self in wounding my Reservedness, is greater than the Violence you will do your self in over-looking what is now past. It much concerns my Reputation, that you immediately return to the Meeting. But if you persist in your Resentment, you will have farther Occasion, if the loss of my Favour may give you any.

A Messenger was immediately sent with this Letter to *Principio*, who express'd much gladness at the Receipt of it; and without any Recollection, obey'd his Mistress, as being satisfied in Mind, that nothing discovers a real Passion, more than Jealousy. He comes very gayly into the Room where the Ladies were, which *Lucretia* perceiving was not a little troubled, for she doubted not of his being in Love with *Julietta*, though she thought so well of him as to wish he had rather address'd his Affections to her self.

Principio.

Principio finding himself in the Presence of *Julietta*, thought it not requisite to speak to any other, e're he had first assured her of his compliance with her Desires. Approaching her with a Graceful Smile, he made her this Compliment, *Madam*, I have consider'd this Room with as much Respect as if it had been a Temple, and your Person no less; since it not only kept me from profaning the one, and offering any violence to the other, but also from revenging by that kind of Duel, which the Law permits between Gallants and their Mistresses. *Julietta* reply'd, being so much, as I am, a Servant to *Madam Lucretia*, I have taken upon my Account the Affront you have done her, when she would have shewn you a Kindness; never thinking of any Law that permits a Man to revenge himself of a Lady by way of Duelling.

Lucretia, knowing that that indiscreet Action of *Julietta's* proceeded meerly from her Jealousy, would not be engag'd in her Excuse; so that she very confidently made Answer thus: There was never so great a Familiarity between us, *Madam*, as might oblige you to take my Part with so much Passion, in an Occasion wherein I should not have wanted Confidence to revenge my self. But not knowing any thing that should oblige me to Jealousy, and thinking not the Affront done to me so great

as you would perswade me it were; my Precipitation was not accordingly so great as yours. I am very glad you make me the Riddle of your Interpretations; let them be thought such by whom you please, but for my part, I have already given them an easy Solution, such as none in the Company can be ignorant of. *Julietta*, not a little mov'd at the freedom of that Discourse, would have reply'd; but the Gentlewoman of the House unwilling the Difference should go any further, interrupted them, and oblig'd them to sit down; for several other Ladies were coming into the Room. *Principio*, was that Night, not only very sumptuous in his Apparel, but also full of excellent Discourse; insomuch that there were few Ladies in the Company, who were not much taken with him, among whom *Lucretia* was the most concern'd of any. Her thoughts were full of what had happen'd between her and *Julietta*, and she was now resolv'd to use all the Artifices she could, to get away that Gallant from her; wherein at last she had her Desire, as the Story hereafter mentions. All the Favours which *Principio* receiv'd of his Mistress, were pay'd by her with extraordinary demonstrations of Affection; for indeed the Lady had a greater kindness for him

him than any other; though at that very time she lov'd another absent Gentleman, whom she had granted more particular Favours than ever she had *Principio*. For the Gallant then absent had received of her by way of Kindness, what in Matrimony is called due Benevolence, and consequently had she not been lost to all Modesty, she would have kept the Promise she had made him; since the breaking of that and her own Reputation were not distinct Actions.

This Gallant of hers, whose Name was *Don Frederick Dorella*, had made a Journey to *Madrid*, to prosecute a Suit of Law against the Count of *Boceyna*, his Uncle, for a considerable Estate in Lands, which at last was decided in a Sovereign Council of *Arragon*. He was return'd to *Valencia*, with a Decree to put him into Possession of the said Estate which amounted to Two thousand Crowns *per Annum*. *Julietta* was extremely put to her Shifts, not knowing how she should keep in with both these Gallants, and satisfy them at the same time. She consider'd that her Honour was engag'd with *Don Frederick*, and her Love with *Principio*. Her Affections being so much the more heightn'd towards the latter in requital of his assiduous Attendances,

as

as it was remitted towards the former, by Reason of his Absence; a thing not at all to be wonder'd at, since most Women mind only present Objects.

But as drowning Persons will catch at any thing and the distress'd are commonly glad of any Advice; this Lady whom we represented before, one of the greatest Wits of her Nation, reduc'd to this Extremity, must needs advise with a Maid, whose Fidelity and Secrecy, she had great Assurance of; resolving in her self to find out some Expedient, whereby she might make sure of the one and not lose the other.

She receiv'd *Don Frederick* into the House, in the Night, thinking she could not civilly deny him the Reiteration of a Kindness she had once granted him: And she kept the other in hand with Love-letters, allowing him not to see her as often as he desir'd, as well to add fuel to his Love, as that the other, whom she was more oblig'd to favour, might have the freer Access. Her excuse to *Principio* was, that she wanted not Over-seers; that her Friends were very shy in Point of Honour; that one of them watch'd her Day and Night; and that the greatest Pleasure he could do her, was, to forbear passing through

through the Street where she liv'd, till she had assur'd him that the Coast was clear. *Principio*, who had really lov'd her, and suspected nothing of the Imposture, easily credited all she said and punctually obey'd her.

Don Federick, was willing to requite the Kindness he had receiv'd from her, by marrying her; but having a Mother alive, who would not have been well pleas'd with that Marriage, he took Occasion to put it off; hoping it would not be long e're she were remov'd out of the way, as being very ancient. So that he pass'd away the time very jocundly with his Mistress, whilst she by her cunning Insinuation and Artifices, endeavour'd to bring *Principio* into a Fool's Paradise, and make him believe all proceeded from Affection.

There happen'd about this time a Difference between *Principio*, and another Gentleman, of the most eminent about the City, whose Name was *Don Renatus*, as they were Playing at Tennis. Some Friends interpos'd between them, and 'twas conceiv'd they were made Friends; but the Reconciliation prov'd such as neither was satisfied. *Principio* was a Person of a Generous open Nature, grounding his Gallantry on the Employments he had
in

in *Flanders*; and imagining that no Man, having any thing to say to him, would do it otherwise than by the ways of Honour. But his Adversary conceiving he had more reason to be offended than the other, who had not expressed so much Resentment, smother'd his Malice, in hopes of an Opportunity, wherein he might revenge himself with Advantage.

Don Frederick, was gone to a certain Place in the Country, where he stay'd three or four Days. *Julietta* who had a great Kindness for *Principio*, sent him word to come to her House in the Night, but so secretly and with such Caution that none might perceive it; inasmuch as the Freedom she gave him, concern'd her Reputation in the highest Degree. The Amorous Cavalier obey'd her in this, as he had done in many other things she had commanded him, coming thither at such Hours as it was not likely any should see him.

Thus by his Credulity he promoted the Designs of this deceitfull Woman, who would craftily make the most of both her Gallants; so that, preventing their being Jealous of one another, nay, knowing that they were Rivals, she gull'd them both.

G

Had

Had she been free to make her own Choice, no doubt she would have pitch'd upon *Principio* for her Husband. But *Frederick* being afore-hand with her, she could do no less, though it were only out of a fear to lose him, and prevent the Reproaches he might make her, than keep him still in play, and expect the performance of the Promise he had made to Marry her, as soon as his Mother were march'd off. But out of an apprehension that even then he might possibly break his Word with her, she thought it Prudence to give *Principio* also a little more Line. Upon these Considerations she suffer'd her self to be Courted by both.

Principio being now more kindly entertain'd by his Mistress than he had been, began to conceive a Hope to obtain of her, within a short time, the grand Favour that can be expected from a Woman. But he reckon'd without his Hostess; for it was her Fear that if she oblig'd him in what he so much desir'd, he might become absolute Master of those Inclinations, which she had so dexterously divided between them both. However, *Principio* pass'd away the Time pleasantly enough, during the absence of *Frederick*; but as soon as he was return'd to *Valentia*, *Ju-*
lietta

lietta began to put on a greater Reservedness, and would not be so much as seen by *Principio*. She made him such plausible Excuses for it, that he, loving her as he did, believ'd all she said, though not without some Suspicion, that there might be something else in the Wind: Upon which account he often disguis'd himself, that he might, undiscover'd, visit the Street where she liv'd, in the Night. But he never could meet with any Person, of whom he might conceive any Jealousy; yet that Disguise did him a Courtesy: For by that means he escap'd being discover'd by the Cavalier who sought to be reveng'd of him. That he met not with *Frederick* in that Street, proceeded hence, that *Julietta*, fore-seeing all Inconveniencies, had order'd, that *Frederick* should come to her House, through that of a She-friend of hers, which was another Street, and had a Back-door, leading into a Garden, joyn-ing unto *Julietta's*, in whose Embraces she spent the whole Night.

It happen'd, one Night, that *Principio* being in the Street where his Mistress liv'd; his Adversary, *Don Renatus*, attended by two of his Servants, comes into it by another way, being not well assur'd it was he, they follow'd him at a distance,

being loth to do another that Mischief which they only intended him. *Principio* at last observ'd them, and finding himself unfurnished with Pistols, to deal with Persons who never went without them, as having only his Sword to defend himself; he bethought him to make the Signal he was wont at *Julietta's* Door, who as good Luck would have it, was come down Stairs, after she had put *Frederick* into Bed. She looks out at the Window, to see what her second Gallant would have, who, as soon as he perceiv'd her, desir'd her immediately to open the Door, otherwise he was a dead Man, in regard *Renatus* his Enemy follow'd him, and he was destitute of Weapons to defend himself. The Lady imagin'd that *Principio* would only put a trick upon her, and only said so, that he might be the sooner admitted in. But *Principio*, with many Oaths, affirm'd he said nothing but the Truth, and that *Renatus*, with two others, were coming upon him.

Julietta, was extremely troubled at his Discourse, and for Answer, told him, That a certain Gentlewoman of her Acquaintance was come to see her, and to be her Bed-fellow that Night, and that she durst not open the Door, least she should see

see him. *Principio* press'd her the more to do it, aggravating the danger he was in, and charging her that she had little Love for him, when she deny'd him entrance into her House in so great an Extremity, which the greatest Stranger in the World would not have deny'd him. *Julietta* told him again, That she could not do it without prejudice to her Reputation. That as to the Love she bore him, he needed not doubt of it, since it could not be greater than it was, and call'd Heaven to Witness, that she was extremely perplexed, that she could not satisfy his Desires. *Principio* told her, that since her Friend was in a Room above-Stairs, she might without any scruple open the Door, and let him stay below, till such time as he might retire with Safety.

Julietta seeing him so importunate, imagin'd it proceeded from some Suspicion he had conceiv'd of her, and that he had seen *Frederick* coming into the House. To be assured whether it were so or no, she look'd into the Street, and saw the three Men who pursu'd him, and whispering one to another; as being in some uncertainty whether it were the Person they look'd for. These Circumstances fully satisfied her, that *Principio* was in very
G 3 great

great Danger ; and to find some Expedient to give him Entrance, she bid him expect a little with Patience, and she would see whether she could open the Door. She went up Stairs to see *Frederick*, who, wondering at her stay, ask'd her what occasion'd her going down. She told him, her Aunt was not fall'n a Sleep, and that she could not come to Bed, till she were. Desiring him to have a little Patience. Having thus satisfi'd him, she went into another Room, to consider with her self what might be done in such an Extremity. On the one side, she saw *Frederick* possessed of her Bed, a Person of a fantastick Humour, yet one whom she was engaged to, and had made Master of the most precious thing she had, and still humour'd out of a Hope to be one Day his Wife; so that her Honour was on his part. On the other, the Love she bore *Principio* would have prevailed with her, not to suffer him to be assassinated by his Enemies, which he must run the hazard of, if she reliev'd him not, it being in her power to do it: So that she was strangely distracted, not knowing whether she should follow the Dictates of Honour, or those of Love. At last, after divers Considerations, that of Honour prevail'd with her, and oblig'd her

her not to receive *Principio* into the House. For if she did, she reflected, That her Reputation would be endanger'd two ways; one, that it could not be done without *Frederick's* hearing of it, who would thence take Occasion to break his Promise; another, that if *Principio* were pursued by his Enemy, and that he should see him come into her House, he would be apt to make an ill Construction of it, and that might come to the Ears of *Frederick*, even though he saw him not.

Having thus resolv'd to stick to the surer side, she went down Stairs, and finding *Principio* still at the Door, *My dearest Love*, (said she to him) *Heaven's my Witness*, how willing I am to satisfy your Desires, by giving you Entrance, not only into my House, but even into my Heart, which is absolutely at your Disposal. I see you are pursu'd, as you told me, but it would be too great an Inconvenience to me, that you should be seen coming into my House at such an unseasonable Hour; being a Person yet so unblemish'd in my Reputation as I am. I beseech you consider with your self what Discourses it might occasion; besides my Friend, who is my Red-fellow this Night, is awake, and as Women are extremely inquisitive, she will be desirous to know the Occasion of my stay, and who has

kept me so long from her ; for there is a very great familiarity between us. Pardon me therefore, that I cannot grant your Desire ; it is the greatest Affliction imaginable to me, that I must leave you in such a Danger ; but reflecting on that of my Reputation, I know you would not have me to hazard it, since I doubt not but you are so generous, as to prefer my Honour before your own Life.

This unworthy Treatment from his Mistress, in so pressing an Extremity, went to the Heart of *Principio* ; nay he was so startled to find himself thus deceiv'd, that it would not have troubled him much if *Renatus* had set upon him, that he might be revenged of the Affront done him by *Julietta*, by dying before her Eyes.

I should never have imagin'd, (said he parting from her) that you could have been so Barbarous, as to put me off so poorly in so dangerous an Exigency, or so inexorable, upon the Entreaties of so faithful a Servant. If you ever had any real Kindness for me, that Reputation you stand so nicely upon, would have run no Hazard, either as to your Friend, or my Enemy, by your receiving me as a Husband, upon which account only I made my Addresses to you : Upon which if you, ungrateful Woman, had entertain'd me, and not insisted on frivolous Respects grounded on
such

such Maxims as I cannot like, my Heart had at this time been absolutely at your Disposal. To make it deservedly such, has been the main end of all my Courships and Services; but Heaven would not permit it, and since I could find no Compassion in your Heart, I will go and try what I may expect from my Enemy, with a Resolution never to forget a Procedure I am so much astonish'd at.

Julietta would have made him some Answer, and extremely mov'd at his Discourse, was resolv'd to hazard all, to assure him of her Affection. But when she went to call him, he was got a great way down the Street, pursued by *Renatus*, who being assured he was the Person he look'd for, was going to set upon him.

His Resentment of her Unkindness, considering the imminency of the Danger, seem'd just to her, and being extremely troubled thereat, after she had blam'd her self, she quarrell'd at Heaven, which in the mean time secur'd her Lover from Danger, and reserv'd him for happier Adventures.

Renatus coming within Pistol-shot of *Principio*, perceiv'd that he had met with his Friend *Don Alonzo*, who with his Servant, was going home to his Lodging,

which prevented him from executing his Design. For *Renatus* being, in appearance, and that before several Persons, reconciled with him, all would have blam'd him, had he assaulted him upon the old Account; especially at Advantage, and with Fire-arms. So that seeing he had lost such a fair Opportunity to revenge himself, he slip'd aside, to avoid being known, imagining he had not been discover'd. *Principio* related the whole Story to his Friend, and how he had been pursu'd thither; which he much wondred at, seeing *Renatus* so little minded the Engagement he had made before so many Persons of Quality, and that so slight a Business should stick so close to his Heart.

It was by this time very late, and as well for that Reason, as to be satisfied of what he suspected, *Principio* being near to *Don Alonzo's* Lodging, resolv'd to take part of it that Night, which his Friend was very glad of. They got in, and e're they lay down, they fell into Discourse about what had pass'd. *Principio* open'd himself to *Don Alonzo*, and acquainted him how Affairs stood between him and *Julietta*. *Don Alonzo* had heard somewhat of the mutual Love there was between her and *Frederick*, and was vexed to see his

his Friend had so far mis-plac'd his Affections, and particularly at the Resolution he had made to marry her: Whereupon he could not forbear telling him what he heard of her and *Frederick*; which *Principio* understanding, he immediately presum'd, that the reason why she opened not the Door, must needs be, that her former Gallant was with her. A thousand Passages came into his Mind, but he particularly reflected on the Prohibition, which the crafty Gentlewoman had made him, of speaking to her in the Night, and that it was only since *Frederick's* return from *Madrid*: Upon which communicating his Thoughts to his Friend, they jointly concluded, that *Frederick* must needs be in the House with her. To be fully assured of it, they order'd a Servant of *Don Alonzo's* to examine the Business, and to continue in the Street, till it were Day: And for further certainty, another Servant was appointed to stand Centry in the other Street, by which *Frederick* was wont to get in at a Back-door. With this Precaution they went to Bed together; but *Principio* was in such a Disturbance, that he could not sleep a wink. About half an hour before Day, one of the Servants brought Intelligence that he had

had seen *Don Frederick* going out of the House belonging to *Julietta's* Friend, and that about the same time, he had seen *Julietta* in one of the Windows that look'd into that Street, looking on him as he went out, and that he was sure 'twas no other than she her self. This Account satisfied *Principio* so fully, that all the Love he formerly bore that impudent Woman immediately vanish'd.

'Twas not imaginable, that *Frederick* frequented that House upon the account of the Mistress of it, who being turn'd of fifty, could not be courted by any Gallants. Besides, she had the Reputation of being a very Charitable Person in Love-affairs, and was wont to promote the Enjoyments of younger People, and to give excellent Directions how they might most cautiously Accomplish their Desires.

The Night following, *Principio* would himself, (from the House of a certain Friend of his) see *Frederick* getting into the Sanctuary of that Charitable Sollicitress; and for his further Assurance, he lay perdue upon the Roof, whence he discovered, That, that favoured Gallant continu'd there, till Word was brought him, that he might make his Entrance
into

into *Julietta's* that very Night. The dissembling Gossip, would needs endeavour to satisfy her Lover, as to the Distaste he might justly have conceiv'd of her: To leave nothing unattempted, and to keep in as near as might be with all, she sent *Principio* a Letter by her Servant-maid in whom she repos'd great Trust, and who was not a Stranger to the Loves of both the Gallants, and promoted the Design of her Mistress in abusing them, for the Advantage she reap'd thereby. Hearing she staid to speak with him, he call'd her up, and receiv'd from her a Paper containing these Words.

Julietta to Principio.

I Should not think the Resentment you justly have against me so great as I do, were I able to express the Trouble I am in to have been the Occasion of it. That I have not been so Compassionate, as the Exigency requir'd, be pleas'd to attribute to the Tendernefs I had for my own Honour; the Consideration whereof made me inexorable. I love you beyond my own Life; but one of my Birth and Sex may be pardon'd, if she Sacrifice all things to the security of her Reputation, rather than expose her self to the Censures of ill Tongues. You may

may well imagine, when I denied you Entrance into my House, that my good Name must run a strange hazard with that troublesome Bed-fellow, whom, to my unhappiness, I was then forc'd to entertain. Notwithstanding the Resentment wherewith you left me, you could not but observe the Distraction I was in: Whence you may infer, how thankfully I have since acknowledged the Indulgence of those higher Powers, who rescu'd you out of a Danger, which I thought unavoidable. You could not have lost your Life in that Adventure, but mine must have run the same hazard, and I do not know any thing but Honour which I should prefer before two things I account so precious. Let me therefore Conjure you, to smother your Resentment of it, and to appease your Indignation; which if I may obtain of you, I shall think all the Devoirs your Love may require little enough to requite it. Your Compliance with my Desires herein will inform me, what Tenderness you have for her Satisfaction and Life, who prays Heaven to preserve yours, as she wishes it may hers, who loves you with all her Soul.

JULIETTA.

Principio was extremely incens'd at this Letter, and tho' he did all he could to dissemble

dissemble it ; yet the Maid looking on him very earnestly during the perusal, sufficiently observ'd it in his Gestures. He entreated her to walk into the Garden, and stay for an Answer ; which was this.

To Julietta.

YOur Satisfactions, hitherto, have ever heightened my Love, but this last has wrought in me a quite contrary effect ; for I know it to be as far from Truth. as I am from Dissimulation : I never thought my self a Person to be entertain'd only to pass away the tedious Interval of another Man's Absence, nor to act the ridiculous Part you have put me upon, only to come upon the Stage, between the several Acts of your secret Prostitutions. If it be any Satisfaction to you, know, I have disengaged all Resentments of your Hypocrisy, and shall never complain of the frivolous Elusions, wherein you suffer'd my Love to languish : No, I am more obliged to your Denials, than ever I should have been to your Caresses. My Life indeed would have been secured if you had received me into your House ; but my Honour would have been irrevocably lost, if without my Discovery of it, you could have exercised your Charity on
two

two several Persons, the same Night. 'Tis very probable you loved me beyond your own Life, when being so closely engag'd to another, you thought me the fittest Person in the World to make your Diversion. I am really obliged to those who intended to be my Murderers, since by their means I came to discover your Imposture. Make sure of that fortunate Gallant, whom your Charitable Neighbour was ushering to your Bed, while I was knocking at your Door. Make sure of him, perfidious Woman, and henceforth, keep all your Cares, and all your Caresses only for him. Live as happily with him as the Conscience of your Humanity towards me will permit, and never think more of Principio, who for his part, disclaims all future Thoughts of you.

It was not long e're this Letter came to the Hands of *Fulietta*, whom the Maid found in that Neighbour's House of hers, through which *Frederick* had Access to her. She receiv'd it with some disturbance; and asking the Maid what Humour she found him in, she told her, that he had given her a very cold Reception, and that he express'd nothing of the Kindness he was wont to do at other times. *Fulietta* a little cast down at that Discourse, *It seems then, (said she) I am not to promise*
my

my self any great Satisfaction from this Letter. Having opened and read it, she was like one put into a fright, not able to speak. Her Friend ask'd her what it contain'd? She thinking it too great a Burden, to acquaint her by Word of Mouth, gave her the Letter to peruse. The old Croney, no less disturbed than the young Mistress, found, that *Frederick's* Love was discovered to the great disadvantage of her Reputation; inasmuch as it clearly express'd, that it was through her House, *Frederick* made his Approaches to her Friend, whereat she was extremely concern'd. *Julietta* was so troubled at the Contents of that Letter, that she curs'd the Day and Hour, she had suffered *Principio* to Court her. The only Comfort she could raise to her self, was, that she knew him to be of so generous a Disposition, that, though he had a just Occasion to be incens'd against her; yet would he conceal her weakness, and not publish the Correspondence there had been between them.

But *Julietta's* Unhappiness was not come to its full height, and the Malice of her ill Fortune thought not this Affliction heavy enough. When the Wheel of that Vagabond Goddess begins to turn, every Spok of it brings a new Misfortune, one
Disgrace

Disgrace coming still on the Neck of another. It happen'd then, that as the Maid was coming out of *Principio's* Lodging, to bring the Letter to her Mistress, *Frederick* saw her with it in her Hand ; she having been careless to hide it, because she was dis-satisfied with *Principio*, who had only that time omitted to make her some Present. *Frederick* immediately began to suspect somewhat, and undiscovered, followed her to the House where *Julietta* was, and got into one of the Upper-Rooms, without any one's taken notice of it ; the Maid by a second over-sight, having left the Door open : He easily saw what pass'd, he heard the Letter read from one end to the other, and withal, their several Discourses, and Comments upon it ; the afflicted Lady bursting forth into Indignation at every Word, and not imagining she was over-heard, she sufficiently express'd her Resentment of so pressing a Misfortune.

The Gentleman in the next Room, who would have been glad of any Occasion to break the Promise he had made to Marry her, (for a Lover once admitted to Enjoyment has other guise thoughts than he who is still kept in Hope) hearing all these things, conceiv'd them a very fair Pre-
tence

tence to dis-engage himself. He therefore goes very confidently into the Room, where they were, and addressing himself to *Fulietta*, who was most startled at his presence; *I expected*, (said he) *considering the mutual Obligations between us, that you would have corresponded thereto, with a Sincerity suitable to my Desires, which aim'd only at this, to see us one Day united by Marriage, and to enjoy those Pleasures lawfully, and without any Sting or Remorse, which we have, upon hopes of the Accomplishment of that Sacred Tye, presum'd to anticipate. But since, ungrateful Creature, I find you lost to all Modesty, and have entertain'd new Gallants, I am free, to dispose of my self as I shall think most convenient; since it were neither just, nor rational I should be inseparably bound to a Person, destitute of all Conduct, and Honour, and so live the rest of my Days in perpetual Jealousies and Distrust.*

Having so said, he left the Room, a little troubled at the Distraction of the Woman, but well satisfied in his own Thoughts, that he had drawn his Neck out of the Collar, that is, shifted himself out of an Affair, which bred him a great deal of trouble; since his Prosecution of it to that Point, had been with the disapprobation of his Mother. 'Tis not to be

be imagin'd, that the Constancy of any Woman, should be able to endure so great a shock of Misfortune. *Julietta* fell into a Swoon between the Arms of her Friend, and continu'd in it a long time ; but at last being come to her self again, she spoke such things as rais'd a great Compassion in her who heard them. She sought for Remedies to her Misery, and not finding any strong enough to re-engage *Principio*, who was acquainted with her former Engagement, nor yet to bring back *Frederick*, whom she knew she had offended ; she was not able to smother the Grief she conceiv'd to find her self so justly slighted by both. She imputed all her Misfortune to her own Misgovernment of her self. Whereupon she fell a tearing of her Hair, and spoke whatever Rage could inspire into a Woman exasperated in the highest Degree.

She pass'd away the rest of the Afternoon in continual Disquiet, not finding any Comfort in either her Friends Discourses, or her own. In the Evening, she went to her own House, but her Distractions went along with her ; so that it is not to be imagin'd but the Night prov'd as restless as the Day had been Unfortunate. Let us a while leave her in
her

her Bed, formerly the Receptacle, but now the secret Remembrancer of her former Miscarriages, in the midst of her Troubles and Transportments, and give an Account what became of *Principio*.

As soon as he had dispatch'd away the Maid with his Letter to *Julietta*, he sat down a while to consider with himself what Course he should take ; for he saw there was nothing to be expected there, and that it was not for his Reputation, to continue his Visits any longer. He had always a great Inclination for the Fair *Lucretia*, ever since she had occasion'd *Julietta* to break forth into that extravagant Discovery of her Jealousy : He consider'd she was a Gentlewoman Nobly descended, and of a great Fortune ; and thereupon he resolv'd to make his Addresses publickly to her, by demanding her in Marriage of her Father and Brother ; which they, upon the first Motion, very willingly granted, even with great demonstrations of Gladness ; inasmuch as *Principio* was a Person generally belov'd in his Country, as being endu'd with those Qualities, which deserv'd the Respects and Esteem of all. The Contract of Marriage was soon drawn up, and the Business immediately spread over the whole City of
Valentia.

Valentia. But when this News came to the Ears of *Julietta*, imagine whether she were not extremely troubled thereat; nay so much the more, in that he pitch'd on the Person, whom of all the World she had most reason to hate, ever since that fatal Meeting, wherein she had express'd so much Indiscretion. She said a thousand things against her, and made many Imprecations against him and her self, charging Heaven with Injustice, sometimes bemoaning her self, and sometimes Cursing her Misfortune. But it was not only one she had to Curse; for the very same Day it was seconded by another, yet greater; inasmuch as *Frederick* having had a plausible Occasion to break the Promise he had made to her, treated about a Marriage, with another Fair and Rich young Lady, whom his Mother had long before recommended to him: The Contract was in a few Days drawn up, and though done as secretly as could be; yet was it soon known all over the City, and it was not long e're the News came to the Ears of *Julietta*. She still retain'd a slender shadow of Confidence in the Love of *Frederick*, which made her imagine he would not break the Promise he had made to her; conceiving she had sufficiently oblig'd him thereto

thereto by the highest demonstrations of Love and Tenderness.

Thus she flatter'd her self, till the very Day that she was clearly convinc'd of the contrary, by seeing his Marriage concluded, and her self absolutely forsaken; but reflecting on the other side, what an unworthy breach of Trust she was guilty of, towards him, to whom she had devoted her Honour; how could she imagine he should not leave her in the lurch? How could she expect, if he married, he should be able to live with her in perpetual Disturbances and Alarms? The very Day that certain News was brought her of this Gentleman's being Married, she fell into such Extravagance; that she would be reveng'd of her beautiful Face: She gave her self several Blows, tore her Hair, and did all the Actions which could only proceed from Madness and Despair: Her fair Eyes became two Fountains, perpetually running; and when her Sighs and Grief gave her a little freedom of Speech, *Wretched Woman that I am, (would she say) of whom all good Fortune has taken its last leave; How deservedly is thy Ingratitude requited with Ingratitude? How justly art thou punished, for having kept thy Faith to a base, treacherous, and perfidious Person, after thou hadst entrusted*

trusted him with the disposal of the dearest thing thou hadst in the World? Thou seest, he denies the Debt ; thou seest he pays it with Inconstancy and Oblivion : Let all easy-natur'd, and inconsiderate Women take Example by me ; let those, who, deluded by Flatteries, and fair Caresses, are drawn in to lose what they shall never recover again, cast their Eyes on my Misery, and then Consider whether there be any other in the World, whose Affliction may be compar'd to mine. I wish for what all others abhor, Death ; but it is deaf and inexorable, nay flights me, and will not come and put a Period to my Trouble.

Having thus bemoan'd her self into some remission of her Grief, she went to see her Friend, through whose House Frederick came into hers ; who though she endeavour'd all that lay in her power to comfort her, yet was her Trouble so great, the Cause of it so pressing, and so little hope of any Remedy ; that all her Remonstrances prevail'd nothing. The only Expedient that seem'd then to offer it self, was to forbid the Banes, since there was some ground to do it ; but what Proof could be made of so secret a Love, without any Promise of Marriage in Writing, or any Testimony, but that of a Servant-maid, who belonging to her, would

would not have been so easily credited? The last and surest Expedient this unfortunate Woman could pitch upon, was to become a Nun; upon which Account she was received into the Royal Monastery of *Zaida*, three Days after the Marriage of *Frederick* had been fully concluded.

This sudden change occasioned a great deal of Noise and Discourse in *Valentia*: All wondered at it, especially those who knew her to be one of the handsomest, and the gayest Lady in *Valentia*.

It was indeed a kind of Miracle, to see a young Lady, who spent her time so passionately at Balls, Plays, and other public Meetings; exchange all those nobler Enjoyments of Life, for the imaginary Felicity of Mortification and Retiredness. This sudden Resolution was attributed, at first, not to the true Cause thereof (for things were carried so closely, that very few knew it) but to the secret Inspirations of that Wind, which blows where it listeth, and is pleased to amuse Mankind with the strange Ways it takes, to transplant the Affections of such as are ordained to Eternal Bliss, from the transient Vanities of this World, to the constant pursuance of the perpetual Joys of a better.

H

Thus

Thus this Lady met with a kinder Spouse than she could have expected elsewhere, and spent the rest of her time with great Content; Blessing her former Afflictions, and the Crosses of her Love, which had brought her to the Tranquility she now enjoyed.

Frederick had a Wife, but Heaven was pleased to punish his Perfidiousness, with her Barrenness; for she bore him no Children, and instead of the great Fortunes he expected with her, he had many Baggs, full of Law-suits, Troubles and Differences with other People, and not a few Discontents with his Wife. He wished, but too late, that he had chose rather to have entered into a Monastery, than into Matrimony, the Inconveniencies whereof sufficiently convinced him, that *Julietta* had made the better Choice.

On the contrary, *Principio* was the happiest Man in the World in his disposal of himself: His *Lucretia* brought him many fine Children, and by the Death of some Friends, a far greater Fortune than he could have expected.

This pleasant *Novel* entertain'd the Company 'till they came to their Inn that Night. Every one took Occasion to commend the Doctor, as well for the smartness

ness of his Invention, as for the Excellency of his Style. The old Gentleman told him, that if the whole Piece were answerable to the Pattern he had shewn them of it ; no doubt but his *Novels* would be very well received in the World, and that he would gain as much Reputation by them, as they had had Pleasure. And thereupon, he earnestly entreated him to Communicate somewhat of the others to them, that so their Travelling might be the less tedious. The Doctor gave him, and all the rest of the Company his very hearty Thanks for the good Opinion they had of him, and proffered them, when they should be weary of Discoursing, to divert them with some of the other *Novels*, 'till they came to their Journey's end, provided they thought them not tedious. They all, with much Gladness and Thanks, accepted of his Proffer.

Being come within a Musquet-shot of the ancient City of *Corduba*, heretofore the chiefest of the Kingdom, while the *Moors* were possessed of all *Spain* ; after Sun-set, an unexpected Accident caused them to make a little halt. Two Gentlemen being come out into the Fields, upon a Challenge, which one had sent to the other, and having Fought, one of them

was worsted, being run through the Body in two several places ; which had obliged his Adversary to make his Escape, to get into some place of Sanctuary. The wounded Person cryed out for some Body to receive his Confession, just as the Coach passed by : Which being heard by the Company, Doctor *Monsalva*, who was a Priest, and a Confessor, could do no less than get out, accompanied by *Garay*, and Mistress *Rufina*, who had a great desire to see the wounded Man. They came to him, and as soon as the Doctor had received his Confession, and given him Absolution, he lost his Speech, being supported by *Garay*. The Doctor returned to the Coach, and having called several times to *Rufina*, who pretended she could not get away *Garay*, the Coachman perceiving it began to grow dark, put on the Horses, having sent them Word what Inn they should take up. *Rufina* was much troubled to see the Coach gone, having left her and *Garay* behind ; they charitably Exhorted the dying Person to recommend himself to the Mercy of Heaven. But he was so far gone, that to spare them further Exhortation he gave up the Ghost. They were much troubled, what they should do with the Body, when certain Officers of Justice came

came in, who having at a distance seen the dead Person in the Arms of *Garay*, and a Woman standing by, and had Notice before that two Men were seen going out of the City, with a design to Fight a Duel ; presently imagined that *Garay* was one of them, and consequently the Murderer of the other. Upon which Presumption, he was sent to Prison, and Order given to the Jaylor to put him fast enough. *Rufina* had more favour, being confined in the House of one of the Officers, who was to have a care of her forthcoming. They both used all the Arguments they could to clear themselves, from having any thing to do with the Murder ; alledging upon what Occasions they came to the Body : But their own Words would not be taken, and it was presumed, the Duel had been upon the Account of *Rufina*. The Judge ordered her to be brought to his own House, to be further Examined, which was accordingly done. When she came thither, there were in the Room several Gentlemen, and among others, a *Florentine*, a very rich Merchant, whom some Business of his own had brought thither : They had no sooner seen *Rufina*, but they all admired her Beauty, and the Majesty of her Air ; but the most satisfied

of any was the *Florentine*, who, to give him his due, was of a very amorous Constitution. *Rufina* was extremely troubled that such an Affront should be done her by the way, as perceiving, that if they were staid the next Day, they should lose the Opportunity of continuing their Journey: The Judge put several Questions to her, concerning the Duel, and the Gentleman's Death; whereto she answered, That she knew nothing of it, and that she was coming in the *Seville* Coach, to go for *Madrid*, accompanied by some other Persons then in the Inn, whom she named; that as the Coach passed by, a certain Person, who had been Wounded upon the Highway, not far from them, called out for some Body to receive his Confession, and that a Priest, who was with them in the Coach, went out to do it, with whom also she went out of Curiosity, accompanied by an Uncle of hers, who came along with her. They ordered, in regard it was grown late, to adjourn the Business 'till the next Day, that a more exact Enquiry might be made into it; and in the mean time, that all who came along with the Coach, should not stir from *Corduba*, without Permission. This done, *Rufina* was brought back to the Officer's House, where

where she was to continue that Night. The *Florentine*, who lived not far from it, accompanied her; but though he had lived at a far greater distance, he would have thought it no great way to wait on a Lady, with whom he was already over Head and Ears in Love. Taking leave of her at the Officer's House, he proffered her all the Services lay in his Power, for which she thanked him, yet taking it for no more than a Compliment. The Vexation she conceived at her being thus unexpectedly stayed, brought her into some Fits of a Fever, the first of a *Tertian*, which she afterwards fell into.

The next Day, all the Persons who came in the Coach, being Examined, gave the same Account as *Rufina* had done before; whereupon *Garay* was set at Liberty. Other Witnesses also, who knew somewhat concerning the Duel, were heard, and gave the Judges a perfect Knowledge of the Murder. *Garay* went immediately to visit *Rufina*, expressing himself extremely troubled at her Indisposition: He did all he could to cheer her up, that they might prosecute their Journey: But the Physician, who had visited her, advised her not to remove thence, 'till she had recovered from her Fever, and told her,

that she could not Travel any further, without hazard of her Life ; which being so, the Coachman was forced to leave them behind, but they were adjudged to defray the Charges of their stay, and he to deliver up what they had in the Coach. The *Florentine* came often to see the fair Traveller, at the Officer's House, and began to treat her very nobly ; an Humour the more remarkable in him, who for fordid Niggardliness might be compared to the covetous *Marquino* : But Love, tho' but a small Deity, yet many times does very great Miracles, turning Avarice into Prodigality, and Cowardice into Courage. *Rufina* kept her Bed fifteen Days, during which time she was constantly visited by Seignior *Nicola*, (so was called the amorous *Florentine*) and after the Visit, came in a Servant with a treat of Sweet-meats, and wild Fowl, which the Officer and his Wife were glad to see ; for the best Share fell to them. At last the Lady, with her Health, recovered also her good Complexion, and her Beauty, and the *Florentine* continuing his Civilities, proffered her a House with a fair Garden, which he had on the side of a pleasant River. *Gay*, whom she called her Uncle, advised her not to refuse that Proffer ; for he had discovered

discovered the Man to be extremely in Love with her, that he was very Rich, and that they might get as much out of the *Florentine*, as they had out of the covetous *Marquino*. *Rufina* accepted the Proffer, and set things in Order to go to the *Florentine*'s, and to continue there 'till she had recovered her self so well, as that she might prosecute her Journey. The *Florentine* would not have it known at *Corduba*, that he had brought her to his Country-House, to prevent Peoples talk, and other Inconveniences that might have ensued. So that, with the consent of *Rufina*, he gave out, that she had left the City in order to the Prosecution of her Journey. Accordingly there were two Mules brought for her, and *Garay*, and two others to carry their Luggage; and having left *Corduba*, towards the Evening, to blind the Eyes of the Inquisitive, they kept on their Way towards *Madrid*: But having rid about half a League, they turned back again, and took up their Quarters at Seignior *Nicola*'s, which was not above two slight Shots from the City. There he expected her, with a magnificent Supper, which he had provided. Here the *Florentine* discovered his Love to her more freely than he had done before.

H S

As

As to his Person ; his Age was about Forty, and of a good manly Countenance, having buried his Wife some two Years before, by whom he had no Children. He was a wholesale Merchant, and Traded in all sorts of Commodities, insomuch that all the other Merchants, not only of the City, but also of other Places thereabouts came to him ; for he held Correspondences in all Parts : He was a very thrifty Person, nay, to give him his due Character, I should use other Expressions : He had some yearly Revenue, besides Twenty Thousand Crowns in ready Money, and Sixty Thousand in Credit, and his own Trading, which was very great : He was a great Student, and had Studied at *Pavia* and *Bononia*, before he became Heir to his Brother, who died a very rich Man in *Spain*, and that Inheritance it was, that occasioned his Marriage at *Corduba*. He had so passionate an Affection for *Rufina*, that he used all the ways he could imagine to insinuate himself into her Favour. Upon that Account it was that he proffered her the use of his Country House, to take the Air, and recover her Indisposition ; conceiving, that being at his own House, it would be the more easy for him to compass his Desires. She had been told by

Garay,

Garay, that this Merchant was a well feathered Fowl, and might be easily plucked, and since this good Luck had fallen to them by Chance, they should make the best Advantage they could of it. That Night they only Supped, and every one went to his rest ; for it was very late. The *Florentine* would have returned to the City, and lie there ; but his Servants, whom he had before instructed, perswaded him not to go abroad at that unseasonable time of the Night, for fear of meeting with any Thieves ; besides, there was a Press in the City, where many young Men presumed to do Mischief in the Night, and Robbed all they met : At last, being perswaded not to stir out, he was glad to pass away some part of the Night in discouraging with *Rufina*, and being got to Bed, his Business was to consider, by what means, and with least Charge, he might obtain his Desires of her. Several things came into his Mind, but the easiest he could find, suitably to his Humour, was to forget her, and never think of her any more. For he knew the Age we live in to be such, that it is a Miracle to get any Kindness in Love, without Liberality. The next Morning he commanded somewhat should be made ready for her Break-fast, not imagining

gining she was up: But when word was brought him, that she was out of Bed, the *Florentine* would needs go into her Chamber, to chide her for rising so soon, and by that means to see whether *Rufina's* Beauty were any way obliged to Artifice. He found her a-Combing her Head, and so had a full sight of her Hair, which was of a great length, and of a Chest-nut Colour. The *Florentine* gave Heaven thanks, who with so many other Perfections, had bestowed on her such an excellent Head of Hair: But he was much more astonished, when upon her dividing it into two parts, to make him an Answer, he saw her Face, as Beautiful as it had appeared to him when she went to Bed; a thing able to inflame a Person less inclined to Love, and more to Avarice than he was; inasmuch as there is not a greater Charm, to secure a Lover's Heart, than to see that the Beauty of his Mistress is Natural, and scorns to borrow any thing of Art. *Rufina* indeed was not much troubled to look after Waters, Paints, Pomatums, Unguents, and such things, wherewith such Women, who stand in need of them, hasten on their Age with their Wrinkles, and lose their Youth e'er they are aware: She only washed her self in fair Water, and needed

no other Vermillion to heighten the Beauty of her Face, than that of her own lively Complexion. The Merchant asked whether she would be pleased to see the Garden ? She made answer, That she was extremely obliged to him for the Trouble he gave himself to divert her, and to satisfy him how kindly she took that Favour at his Hands ; she went along with him just as she was, without putting up her Hair, which hanging down over her Shoulders added much to her Beauty, and it is not much to be doubted, but she had a Design in it. She went down with this new Gallant of hers, who thought it an extraordinary Pleasure to have her by the Hand ; and in that Condition she saw the whole Garden, seeming to be much taken with the Delightfulness of it.

Having recreated herself with him, 'till the Sun began to be somewhat hot ; she returned into the House, and broke her Fast ; after which, having discoursed of several things, she desired to see the whole House.

The amorous *Florentine* wishing nothing so much as that she might see his Wealth, shews her a great Number of excellent Pictures, done by the best Painters in *Europe* : Some very rich Pieces of Tapisstry, Cabinets

Cabinets of Ebony, of several Fashions, Embroidered Beds, and all sorts of Household-stuff of great Value; in a word, there wanted not any of those things requisite for the furnishing of a House fit for a Nobleman. Having seen all the Rooms, he opened a curious Closet, near which there was a little Oratory, and in that Closet there were a great many Pieces of Painting, done at *Rome*, of extraordinary Value, *Agnus Dei's* of Gold and Silver Gilt, and Flowers done as near the Life as could be imagined. The Closet was full of Books, very richly Bound, and neatly disposed into gilt Presses. *Garay*, who was a curious Person, and had read much, was looking very earnestly on the Titles of the Books, which were in one Drawer; and having put that into its place, he took out another, wherein there were others very curiously Bound, but had no Titles on the Backs. *Garay* opens one of them, and finds the Author of it to be *Arnaldus de villa Nova*, and near that were the Works of *Rosino*, *Alquindus*, and *Raymundus Lullius*.

The Merchant perceiving him so taken up with the perusal of those Books, asked him what he looked on so attentively. *I find here, Sir, (replies Garay) a great many Books*

Books of Chymistry, and from the Curiosity I observe in your Collection of Treatises of that kind, I infer, that you have studied that Science: 'Tis true, (says the Florentine) I have spent some time in the perusal of those Authors: But how far, I pray, are you acquainted with them? Only so far, (replies the other) that I have spent the best part of my Life in that Study. Nay then, (says the Florentine) you must needs be a very great Chymist. I am not to acknowledge what I am, (replies Garay) we will Discourse another time of these things more at large; for the present, I shall only tell you, that besides these Authors, I have read all I could ever meet with that treated of this Science. I have turned over the Works of Avicenna, Albertus Magnus, Terno, Pythagoras; the Secrets of Callidus, the Book of the Allegory of Morillus, that of the Secret Stone, and that Entituled, de Tribus Verbis; besides many Manuscripts, which I never shewed any Man. The Florentine was almost out of himself for Joy to hear these things. I am extreamly glad, (said he to him) that this Science pleases you, for I have a particular Inclination for it. I know it very well, (replies Garay) (which he said, having already resolved how to put a Slur upon him,) but in regard I place a great Confidence in you, I will tell you a thing

in your Ear, which you will be much astonished at : It is this, (whispering him in the Ear) that my Niece knows, without any Study, in a manner as much as I do of this Art, and is very Fortunate in the practical Part of it, as you shall see by Experience ; but I intreat you not to speak to her of it at this time, for she would not have it known to any, nay, would not take it well.

Garay could not have pitched upon a more likely way to bring the *Florentine* into the Gin ; for his Avarice was such, that he would have parted with his Soul to find out the Philosopher's Stone ; hoping, if he once got that Secret, ever afterwards to swim in Gold.

Rufina busied herself at the other end of the Closet, while *Garay* made this Discourse to the *Florentine*, and was looking upon some other curious and pleasant Books ; for there were of all sorts : Yet she was not so attentive, but she heard somewhat of *Garay's* Discourse concerning Chymistry, and perceived the Merchant was much taken with it : The Truth is, *Garay* had some Knowledge in that Science, and had spent a considerable Sum of Money, to find out the Philosopher's Stone ; which though many had sought, yet could not any affirm they had met with it : The ill Success he had had in that Business only

ly satisfied him of their Folly, who spend their Time and Estates in so ridiculous a Disquisition, and he was glad to meet with so good an Opportunity, to recover some part of the Money he had squandered away in the search after it: For the *Florentine*, crediting what was told him by *Garay*, imagined himself somewhat above a Prince: He told him, that in that very House, he had all things requisite to make the Experiment; and thereupon brought him into a Room full of Furnaces, Alembicks, Glasses, and Crucibles, with all the Instruments used by the Chymists, and good store of Charcoal. *Garay* seeing that, concluded, the Merchant would be easily taken, and what made him the more confident was, that he imagined he understood all those Books; whereas *Garay* was satisfied he knew only so much of them, as would serve to bring him into the Noose: In fine, they gave over-talking of it any further at that time; though the *Florentine* was unwilling to quit the Discourse. They went down thence into a Ground Room, the Windows whereof looked into the fairest part of the Garden, where Dinner expected them.

After Dinner, *Garay* pretending it was his Custom to take a Nap; left the Merchant alone

alone with *Rufina*, to whom he took Occasion to make a full Discovery of his Love; assuring her, that all he had was at her Service, and desiring her to dispose of it as she pleas'd. She seem'd to entertain the Proffers of his Affection with much Kindness, yet at that time she only rais'd him into a slight Hope shewing her self very pleasant to him.

Having seen a Lute in one of the Rooms above Stairs, she desired it might be brought down for Musick, at which she was Excellent, and contributed much to the bringing about her Designs. The Merchant, who had a little Skill at that Instrument himself, was very glad to hear that she used it, and caused it to be immediately fetched; saying, that his Deceased Wife, played excellently well upon it, and that about a Seven-night before, having entertained some of his Friends with a Collation, they had set it in Tune. The Lute being come, *Rufina* began to play, and made it appear, that there were very few who could excell her at that Instrument: The *Florentine* was astonished at her Dexterity, and to bring him absolutely to her lure, she sung an Air to it, and with such a Grace, that he was at a loss, whether he should more admire her Hand, or her Voice: The Truth is, she had

had a particular Excellency in both ; so that his excessive Commendations of them, were not meer Flattery. With a modest Blush, which spread itself gently over her Face, (a thing she could command, though never acquainted with Shame) she seemed to express a certain Bashfulness, and ere it was quite dispelled, *Seignior Nicola*, (said she to him) *What I have done was only for your Diversion*, be pleased to receive it with some regard to the Desire I had to endeavour your Satisfaction ; which yet I have not done, without much Temerity, before a Person of so delicate an Ear as you are Master of, and one, no doubt, wont to hear the best Voices in the World. I never heard any, (replies Nicola) that came near yours, and therefore I beseech you, let not your Modesty occasion you any prejudice ; nay rather be Proud, Madam, of the excellent Endowments you have so liberally received from Heaven, and acknowledge the Favours it has done you. Be more sensible of your own Worth, and think my Approbation below it : And yet when I was a young Man, I was much addicted to Musick, and some would needs perswade me that my time was well bestowed in it. I must confess, the Spanish Tongue comes not so natural to me as the Italian, the Graces and Beauties whereof, I have better Studied upon the The-
crbo,

orbo, which I am so far Master of, as in some Measure I may satisfy the Hearer. Whereupon perceiving that *Rufina* would have laid by the Lute, he desired her to make use of it a little longer, and to sing one Air more, which she, to Humour him did.

Nicola took occasion to give his dear *Rufina* greater Commendations for the excellency of her Voice than he had done before, and she to renew her Thanks to him, for the Favour he did her. He thought it time to give her leave to take a little rest, and he went himself into another Room to do the like. *Garay* on the other side, instead of Sleeping, was contriving how to get the Philosopher's Stone, not for the credulous *Florentine*, but out of him: He had so perswaded him of his Abilities, in that Science, that he desired nothing so much as to be as knowing in it as he was, but all out of no other Design than to satisfy his own insatiable Avarice. He imagined, that if he could find the Philosopher's Stone, (a Rock rather, against which so many have wracked themselves) all his Household-stuff should be of Gold, that he would be as rich as *Cræsus*, and that the Wealthiest about the City, compared to him, would be little better than Beggars.

Garay

Garay had also a long Discourse with *Rufina*, about the means how they should get the Gudgeon into the Net. He gave her some Instructions in Writing, that the *Florentine* might find she knew something of the Science, at least the Terms of it : *Rufina* got them by Heart, and to begin the Cheat, *Garay* asked for some Links of a Gold-Chain, she had brought from *Seville* : It was a large one, and if there were a dozen Links taken from it, they would not have been missed : Being come into the City, he goes into a Goldsmith's Shop to melt down those Links into an Ingot, which he brought back to the House, and communicated his design to *Rufina*.

Nicola, who had slept all this while as soundly as if he had not been in Love, comes in to them, and they began to talk of several things, far from having any Relation to the Business he had been about ; which *Garay* did purposely to engage the other to fall first into that Discourse. And indeed within a quarter of an Hour, he was gotten into the Subject of Chymistry. *Garay* discoursed of it after the rate of a Man that had spent his whole Estate in the Work ; insomuch that *Nicola* was astonished thereat ; for though he pretended much Skill in the Science, yet could he
not

not but acknowledge himself much Inferiour to the other. *Garay* desirous to give the Merchant all the Satisfaction he could desire, told him that he could turn what Metal he pleased into Gold. The *Florentine* was ravished at the Proposal, and earnestly entreated him that he might see it done. *Garay* asked him whether there were any Charcoal in the House ; the *Florentine* told him there was good store ; for he had had the Curiosity to make some Trials thereof himself.

They went up both into the Room where they had been before, and finding it full of Furnaces, Creusets, Alembicks, and other Chymical Instruments ; *Garay* said to him, *Here we have all things requisite for the present.* He caused some Fire to be brought, and having put a little Copper into a Creuset to melt, the *Florentine* saw it melting : *Garay* took a Box out of his Pocket, wherein there was a Paper full of Powder, which he said was the most principal Ingredient in the whole Work. He put it into the Creuset, which having brought as cleverly as he could to the Window, he poured out the melted Copper, and put in the Ingot of Gold into its place ; and when he had covered it, he told the *Florentine*, that it should not be stirred thence for half an Hour : That
time

time they spent in Discourſing of ſeveral things in Chymiſtry, wherein *Nicola* deſired to make ſome further Progreſs. At laſt, *Garay* thought it time to ſhew him what he had done, and ſo opening the Creuſet, he took out the Ingot and ſhewed it him. The covetous Miſer was tranſported with Joy to ſee it, though he were not fully ſatisfied of its being perfect Gold. *Garay* wiſhed him to have it tried by a Goldſmith; which trouble he would needs take upon himſelf, and having found that it was very fine Gold, of Twenty-two Carats, he returns extraordinarily well ſatisfied. While he was gone out, *Garay* inſtructed *Rufina*, how to effect their Deſign upon *Nicola*, who being more Covetous than Amorous, would have them immediately to begin the great Work of finding the Philoſopher's Stone. He promiſed *Garay* extraordinary Recompences, and told him, that he would be at the whole Charge, though it ſhould amount to Twenty Thouſand Crowns. *Garay*, who had contrived how he intended to gull the Merchant, returned this Answer to the great Proffers he had made him.

Seignior Nicola, (ſaid he) *I am now gone almoſt ſeven years beyond the grand Climatrical Year of my Life, which is as much as to tell you, that I have paſs'd the greateſt and beſt*

best Part of it. It were no hard matter for me, with the help of the Science I am now Master of, to spend the little which is yet to come, at my ease, and it may be, more plentifully, than some of the Wealthiest Grandees of Spain; and that I can be without any Man's Favour or assistance, I think you may have observed your self. And in regard I have no Children, to inherit my Estate, which, I thank Heaven, is somewhat considerable also in Lands; the Main concernment I have in this World, is to look after this young Woman, my Neice. She is already but too Rich, in that she has all I have, though her Father, (who was my Elder Brother) left her no mean Fortune. She might, had she a mind to it, be as Nobly Married as she was before; for her late Husband was defended from the Noblest Houses in Andaluzia. Nor were it hard for me to add to her Wealth, you know it; but such is my Confidence in you, that I will tell you the Reason why I do not.

That I am the ablest Alchymist in all Spain, is known to many, which being also come to the Ears of his Majesty, I am sought after every where: But I have hitherto had the Happiness to keep out of their Clutches, who are perpetually employed to find me out, having spread a Report, that I was gone for England. It is not out of any Contempt of the Honours and Wealth of this World, that I avoid the Searches of

of those, whom his Majesty has enjoyn'd to bring me to him; but out of this Consideration, that I would not purchase any Favour with the loss of my Liberty: For I must expect no less, than to spend the rest of my Days in a Noble kind of Captivity. I will express myself more clearly to you; his Majesty has at the present very great Armies on Foot in several Parts, which put him to a vast Expence, such as his own Revenue, and what comes from the Indies are not able to defray: So that, to satisfy his Ambition, he is forc'd to make use of the Industry of his Subjects. Now were it my hard Fortune, to be found by those who so narrowly search after me; the King, knowing that with the Assistance of my Art, he might easily recruit the Charge he is at, would immediately dispose of me into some Fortress, where being confined for the rest of my Days, I should be perpetually kept at Work, to augment his Treasures, and supply his pressing Exigencies. I should not think much to do it once or twice, but the Avarice of Men is grown to that height, that they are not satisfy'd with abundance, if they have the least Apprehension, that the Source of it may ever be dry'd up. This is the true Reason Signior Nicola, which obliges me to keep out of my own Country, and to Play least in Sight; and therefore receive what I have told you as a great Secret, such as I should not have communicated to my own Brother,

I

had

had he been in the World : But I have that Confidence of you, that you will never reveal it.

Nicola return'd Garay his most Affectionate Thanks for the great Trust he repos'd in him, and thought himself so happy in the Discovery he had made to him; that he conceiv'd the greatest Nobles might justly envy him. His Answer to him, was, That the Grounds and Motives on which he conceal'd the excellent Knowledge he had acquired, were just and rational; since that no doubt but he would be confin'd, though for no other reason than this, to prevent his carrying over such a Secret into another Country, to serve a King that were an Enemy to his Catholick Majesty. He acknowledg'd himself infinitely obliged to him, and wish'd it were in his Power to serve him; but having only the Wealth he was possessed of to proffer him, he entreated him to dispose of it as freely as if it were his own, and since he had shewn him a Tryal of his Abilities; that he would not think that enough, but ere he left *Corduba*, would give him such further Instructions, as, being observed, he should not miscarry in the great Work. Garay promised to satisfy his Desires, telling him withal, that so precious a thing as Gold could not be gotten but with Gold, and that the Foundations

Foundations of all Designs require Charge; that the Philosopher's Stone could not be found without Cost and much Pains; that if he were resolv'd he should attempt the doing of it, he must be at the whole Charge, and that afterwards the Profit should be equally divided, and that in a short time he would be glutt'd with Wealth.

The *Florentine*, ravish'd at the Proposal, proffer'd to spend all he was worth upon that Account. *Rufina* promised to assist them. *Nay*, (says *Garay* to her) *there is such a Necessity of your Assistance, that we shall not be able to do well without it.* They thereupon resolv'd, that within two Days they should begin the great Work. *Garay* told him, that the Principle of the Divine *Elixir*, (so the Chymists call the Perfection of their Work) was formed out of the solidity of *Mercury*, and other things which he nam'd to him, together with the Urine and Excrement of a Red-hair'd Child; that all was to be put into an Alembick, with Powder of *Aloes*, the Infusion of *Opium*, Toads-grease, *Arsenick*, and *Salt-Peter*: But he hoped to do it chiefly with the Urine and Excrements aforesaid, which he order'd *Nicola* by all means to procure, as being the most necessary Ingredient of all.

He promised to procure it ; and, to begin the Work, the Merchant deliver'd him Five hundred Crowns in Gold, to buy certain precious Drugs, which he said were necessary : And this the *Florentine* did the more willingly, as well out of the Confidence he had to receive them multiplied into so many thousands ; as out of a Design he had thought on the Night before, of making *Rufina* his Wife, and by that means assuring himself of *Garay*. Whereupon that very Evening after Supper, he took occasion to carry *Garay* along with him into the Garden, and acquainted him with his Resolution. The Alchymist thought it a good way to further his Work, and accordingly he approv'd of his Intention, and acknowledg'd it would be a great Honour to his Niece to espouse so worthy a Person ; but that there was one Obstacle to be first removed. *What may that be ?* (says the other :) *Garay* told him, that his Niece could not be Married, till a Dispensation were first obtained from *Rome*, in regard, that out of the extraordinary regret she conceiv'd at the loss of her late Husband, she made a Vow to enter into a Religious Life ; that the Occasion of their going to *Madrid*, was to receive six years Arrearages of a
Rent

Rent due to them from a Person of *Quality*, who was very backward in paying, in Order to her Reception into a *Nunnery*; but that as soon as the Dispensation were come from *Rome*, they would conclude the Marriage, which he doubted not but she would accept, not only out of the Compliance she had ever expressed towards him; but also out of this consideration, that she was to Match herself with a Person inclined to the Study of a Science, wherein she had naturally attained so great Perfection. *Nicola* was the most satisfied Man in the World to have such a parcel of good Words given him; in-somuch that from that very Hour, *Garay* became absolute Master of all he was possessed of.

Garay and *Rufina* having conferred Notes upon this new Overture, were more Confident than ever to compass their Design. He laid out some of the Money received of *Nicola*, in Drugs, perswading him they were not to be had under such and such Rates. He also furnished himself with new Furnaces, Creusiblis, and Alembicks, pretending that those in the House before, were not for his purpose. In the mean time, the silly Merchant was enquiring up and down where he might have the Urine

of a Red-headed Child, which he had much ado to get : For the Mothers fearing it was to be used in some Operation of Witch-craft, would not easily let him have it ; but Money is omnipotent, and can do any thing. *Garay* could have done as much in one Day as in a Hundred, as to the performance of what he had promised ; but the poor Merchant must be fool'd some way or other, till he met with an Opportunity to smite him, and take a Dog's leave of *Corduba*, with as much as he could shift away on two good Horses, which lay leager in a secret Place for that purpose. He dispos'd all the Distillations into the Furnaces, in the presence of *Nicola* : He bought some Metals, as Brass, Copper, and Tin, several sorts of Salts, and other things commonly used by Chymists ; and setting Fire to the Furnaces, they distill'd what had been put into them, but contributing nothing to the Business, and only to abuse him, who was at the Charge of all the Foolery. As to *Nicola's* Love, he was much better treated than he was before ; inasmuch as since the proposal of Marriage, *Rufina* the better to carry on the main Design, grew more kind to him ; especially in *Garay's* Absence, which the besotted Coxcomb

was

was so transported with, that he knew not whether his Head, or his Heels were on the Ground.

About this time *Nicola* receiv'd a Bill of Exchange of a considerable Sum, to be pay'd within twenty Days after Sight. This, with the breaking of some of his Debtors in other Countries, put him into some Fear of doing the like, if his Attempts in Chymistry prov'd not successful. But to prevent all Inconveniences, he did what most of his Condition and Kidney are wont to do; who being upon the Point of Breaking, secure what they can of their Estates, that they may afterwards the more Commodiously remove into some other Country. So our Merchant, finding himself within some distance of Breaking, provided for the Misfortune, in case it should happen, and so promoted the mischievous Plot of *Garay*, and *Rufina*; whom he truly acquainted how Affairs stood with him, as if they had been his most faithful Relations. *Garay* had left in the Custody of a certain Friend of the Merchant's, a good Sum of Money, and some Jewels of great Value, with Order they should not be delivered to any, but to one of them two. Besides which, he brought some to his Country-

house, and hid them in a secret Place, in the Presence of *Rufina*, of whom he had a Confidence, as if she had really been his Wife. *Garay*, who was still busy about his Distillations, put him into good hope, that within twenty Days he should see the end of the great Work, and his House full of Gold, to recover the loss he had receiv'd by his Debtors.

About this time, there happen'd a Business which oblig'd the Merchant to take a Journey, to advise with a Correspondent of his, how to prevent the Misfortune he saw coming upon him. *Garay* and *Rufina* being entrusted with the House, (which by the way was committing the Sheep to the care of the Wolf) thought it a fair Opportunity to decamp, and make the best they could of the present Game. They secur'd all the Money, and Jewels they could come at, and left the Plate and some other things, they could not so conveniently carry away, behind them, though with some regret; thinking it more Prudence to make a safe Retreat with what were considerable, than to hazard all, by grasping at too much. Having therefore loaden themselves with what was most precious, they left the Furnaces and the Alembicks, made the Philosopher's Stone
at

at the Cost of the absent Merchant, and took Horse while the People of the House were fast asleep. They took their way towards *Malaga*, and travell'd all Night, having about them above Six thousand Crowns in Money and Jewels, and left upon a Table near the Furnaces, a Letter, to hasten the Credulous Merchant to hang himself.

Two Days after their Departure he Returns home, very ill satisfi'd with his Journey, in that he had not done any thing in the Business which occasion'd it. All the hope he now had, was in his Uncle *Garay*; imagining by his means, he should yet be able to shew his Head, and not only keep up his Reputation, but also be Richer than ever he had been; such a strange Mist had the Witch-craft of Chymistry cast before his Eyes. He came not to his Country-house, till after Night, where he found the Servant whom he had left with *Garay* and *Rufina*; for the rest of his People were in the City. The Servant receiv'd him with a sad Countenance, and being got up Stairs, he ask'd him (fearing somewhat were amiss) where his Guests were, of whom the Servant could give him no Account; as not having seen them when they went out, and could

only say, that two Nights before they had lock'd him into the Room where he lay, which he had been forc'd to break open, because he could no otherwise get out. They search'd up and down, and found that the Chests had been open'd, and all the Mony convey'd away. This was not the worst the Merchant feared, but that they had also been with him, in whose Custody he had greater Sums of Money, and the most precious of his Household-stuff. It being too late to make any Enquiry that Night, he thought it his best Course to go to Bed; but desirous to visit the Furnaces once more, he finds on the Table the Paper, left there by *Garay*, which having open'd he found in it these Lines.

Seignior *Nicola*.

IT is the just Reward of those who attempt things Impossible, to be shamefully disappointed. Many of your Profession, have been ruin'd by their Faith, in things relating to their Trade: It was therefore but fit you should repent of your Credulity, in a Business you understood not. It was indeed unpardonable, to expect to see that done by any Man, in a few Days, which the Sun, who has

has a greater Power over the Metal you were so Covetous of, cannot perfect under Four or five hundred Years. Your loss, I must confess, is great, but you have this comfortable Consideration, That you may now defy Chymistry, and all its Cheating Professors, to shew you such another Trick as we have done. But, to avoid all future Temptations, take this hearty Advice from two dear Friends of yours ; put all the fine Treatises, you have of that pernicious Art, into your Furnaces, and having set Fire to them, and your House together, fairly run away by the Light of it.

The poor Merchant had no sooner read them, ere he was Convinced, they were his kind Guests who had robb'd him, and Extracted what he had in his Chests and Cabinets, with more ease than he had infus'd it into them. How he spent the Night, is only to be imagined ; being just upon the Point of Breaking, and not knowing any means to remedy it. All the hope he had, was, that the Money, and Jewels which he had left in a Friend's Hands, were safe enough ; nay, he despair'd not to find out those, who had done him the Mischief. He turn'd himself from one side to another, not out
of

of any disturbance, occasion'd by his Love to the crafty *Rufina*, (for that was absolutely lost with his Money) but that he had been so basely trepann'd by a Beggarly Rascal. Then did he begin to Curse Chymistry, and all the Authors that ever Writ of it, whereas he should rather have given Heaven thanks, who, by the Cheat which was put upon him, had prevented the Prosecution of his Design, which might have absolutely ruin'd him. As soon as he perceiv'd any appearance of Day, he got up, and went into the City, to his Friend, whom he had entrusted with the keeping of his Money, and other things. He ask'd him whether *Garay* had been with him? The other answer'd that he had, and had taken away whatever he had in his Custody, and that therein he had follow'd his own Orders. The Word struck him almost dead; nay, the Resentments he express'd of that loss were so great, that if the other had not known the Cause of it, he would have thought him out of his Wits. He Comforted him the best he could, and told him, that his only Course was to make a speedy search for the Robbers. He did all he could to that purpose, sending Officers, and others, several ways; but that

that which *Garay* and *Rufina* had taken, was so uncommon, that they could never meet with them. So they return'd to *Corduba*, to be pay'd for their fruitless Pursuit, by him who had sent them; which, as his Affairs, stood then, added not a little to his Affliction.

This Adventure was soon known all over the City; and the *Florentine*, not able to accept of another Bill of Exchange that had been sent him, was forc'd to absent himself, and to return to *Florence*, with what he could make by the Sale of his Goods. By this means he turn'd Bankrupt, and defy'd his Creditours, who could not find any thing he had left behind him. The same things happen many times to those, who, with small Estates, engage themselves in too great Affairs, presuming upon this, that let the worst come to the worst, they can secure themselves by an Escape.

The End of the Second Book.

THE



THE
Pole-Cat
OF
SEVILLE.

Book the Third.



ARAT and *Rufina* travelled with great Expedition by remote Paths; and for four Nights together, they would not so much as Sleep in either Town or Village, but only in the Fields, for fear of being trepanned by the Provosts, whom they did not doubt the *Genevan* had sent to compliment them back again: They had changed

changed their Cloths, and having disguised themselves as well as they were able, they were very cautious of going into any place where they might chance to be known. *Garay* took care to provide what was necessary for their Subsistence; and being in the Spring Season, they lay in the open Air without any Inconvenience. They came into a Wood just as the Sun was ready to set, to avoid a thick cloud which threatened to pour upon him, and because it Thundered and Lightned terribly, they struck into the thickest of the Wood to shelter themselves from the approaching Storm. Other Passengers, for the same Reason, took covert in a place close to that which *Garay* and *Rufina* had chosen. They talk'd so loud that they gave *Garay* a curiosity to creep softly from beneath the Boughs where he stood, to go hear what they said: And having got close to them under covert of some very thick Bushes, they perceived that they were three Men, one of whom began to say, If this Storm continues all Night, I doubt whether our project will succeed. I am of your opinion, reply'd another, and the *Hermit de la Serre* will be certainly impatient at our staying so long. 'Tis a rare fellow, says another, that

that Brother *Crispin*: he hides a great deal of Knavery under that Cloak of Religion, by which he insinuated himself so far into the favour of those who gave him that Hermitage; he is so artfull a Hypocrite, answered the other, that he'd deceive the Devil himself; he has got the Reputation of a Saint all over the Country, though he is the arrantest Rogue in the Kingdom. 'Tis now twelve Years says the second, that he has lived by harbouring Thieves to my Knowledge; and in all that time he has been so lucky, as never once to have been either in the Hands of Justice, or so much as suspected of doing an ill Action; whereas there are so many others, who are taken and hang'd for the very first Fact. It must be owned, says another, his Hermitage is very convenient for our Trade, and the Cave he has dug under it is a Place old Nick himself could hardly find out. There was not a hole in the World where we cou'd better have concealed the Fifteen Hundred Crowns which we stole Yesterday from the Merchant you know of; that's the most considerable Robbery, I believe, that has been committed a great while in this Country. If the Rain does but give over, says he that spoke first, I don't despair of

of getting as much to Night: Upon this they fell to contriving the means they shou'd make use of to compass their Design. *Garay* did not miss one single word they spoke; he knew the Country as well as if he had been born in it, and knew the Hermit they spoke of very well; 'till then he was so far from imagining he was of that Profession and that his Hermitage was a Receptacle for Thieves, that he had believed him to be a very holy Man, He returned softly back to the Place where he had left *Rufina*, and told her what he had heard; there they remained without making the least Noise, either with their Horses or themselves, for fear of being discovered and by that means disabled from making their Advantage of this Accident: But when they found the Rogues were gone, they rode on to an Inn which they knew of, and there stay'd all the following Day to consult what they should do. Having contrived every thing, they went towards the Hermitage where Brother *Crispin* dwelt (this was the Hermit's Name) and being now pretty near it, *Garay* tyed *Rufina* to a Tree, upon which she fell to screaming as loud as she could bawl: Is there no body here to assist a wretched Woman, and rescue her from her Murderer?

therer? Ah Heaven! take Compassion on me, and Revenge my injured Innocence. *Garay* on the other hand Played his part extremely to the Life, Crying out, 'tis in vain to call for help, Recommend thy self to God for that little time thou hast to live; for nothing can save thee; as soon as ever thou art fasten'd to this Tree, I will make a Passage for thy Soul with this Poynard. *Crispin* heard her at her very first Squaul, and being alone in his Hermitage (which did not often happen, for he was generally every Night accompanied by Gentlemen of his own Profession, who were not quite so holy as to work Miracles;) he laid hold of two Pistols, and coming to the Place where he had heard the Noise, discharged one of them; which was very convenient for *Garay*; for it being agreed that he should fly when any Body came to them, it might now be thought that the Fright he had taken at the Noise of the Pistols, might make him run away. He immediately got upon one of the Horses, and holding t'other by the Bridle gallopp'd off as fast as his Horse could lay Legs to ground. *Crispin* drew near, and by the Light of the Moon, which then shone very bright, he saw *Rufina* all in tears, and in appearance terrified

terrified with the danger she had been in and to carry on the Plot, seeing *Crispin*: approach, she cryed out: Art thou return'd then, Villain? Have you recovered your self from the fright which the Pistol put you into, and come now to execute thy cruel purpose? I have none to defend me; take my life; but be assured, that being innocent as I am of what is laid to my charge, Heaven will not fail to chastise thee. The Hypocrite *Crispin*, hearing her talk thus, reply'd, I am not the Person you take me for, Madam, but one that comes to assist you upon so pressing a necessity, and to save your Life. What is become of the Traytor that attack'd it, and obliged me, contrary to the Nature of my Profession, to make use of Arms to defend you; believing that this Action of Charity would be meritorious in the Eyes of God? Saying this he untied her from the Tree to which she had been fastened, which he had no sooner done, than *Rufina* cast herself at his Feet, saying, are you then the Man, Brother *Crispin* (for she knew his Name) that brought me this miraculous assistance; surely Heaven revealed to you the injury that was intended me; since you came with Arms so contrary to your profession, to punish so great a Cruelty.

May

May Heaven reward the charitable aid you have given to an innocent Woman, who was left defenceless. I can no other-ways return the benefit I have received of you, than by my Prayers for a Man to whom I owe no less than my Life, which was exposed to the Rage of a Brother, who had else e'er now deprived me of it.

Brother *Crispin* was mightily taken with *Rufina* (for he was by no means a despiser of the Sex) but as he was obliged to keep up his Hypocrisie by a seeming Modesty and a restraint of his Desires, he forbore to mention a Word of Love, or to do any thing that might lean that way; but continuing his fictitious Sanctity, he said to her, I am not worthy of the least of the Favours that it hath pleased God to bestow upon me; but I do my utmost to live virtuously, and to serve my Creator in this retreat, where his Divine Majesty hath ordained that I should have it in my Power to Succour you: I return him my most hearty thanks therefore, and am overjoyed at having been of so much use to you upon this occasion. I can offer you only a poor Cell for this Night and indeed for as long as it shall seem good unto you, even until you shall

shall have accommodated matters to your content, and that your Brother's Wrath is appeased. I again assure you that it is wholly at your Service, and I offer it as cordially, as a good Christian ought to do unto his Neighbour; for I took this Habit upon me, only in order to execute these and the like Charities. *Rufina* once more returned him thanks for his Civilities, still shedding Crocodile Tears; which all Womankind, (but this Woman in particular,) can do at Pleasure: She very readily accepted the offer he made her, as being a thing of the utmost Importance to their Design: They moved therefore towards the Hermitage; and Brother *Crispin*, who began to be most violently smitten, observing that *Rufina* was tired, endeavoured to comfort her by Soothing Words, and at last took her by the Arm to help her to walk. He opened the Door of the Hermitage; and when they were entered, *Rufina* was very much surpriz'd at the Sight of a sorry Plank, upon which he pretended to Lye a-Nights, with a Crucifix at the head of this scurvy Bed, and a Discipline (a Whip) Hanging upon a Nail; which with a lame Table, was all the Furniture: She began to repent her being come thither; for the meanness of
the

the place, and *Crispin's* assumed Modesty by no means agreed with what *Garay* had over heard from the three Rogues in the Wood. The good Brother, perceiving that *Rufina* look't upon his Furniture with no very great Content, said to her, My Dear Sister, this Habitation no doubt seems very unpleasant in your Eyes, and promises you but an uneasie Lodging, however do not despair, I will provide you better than you imagine. It is very lucky that I have no Body here now to perform their Nine Days Vows for a Child, which some devout Souls are often us'd to do in this Hermitage: Some of them have had the foresight to set up Beds and other Furniture here, that they may be ready for them at any time. The Hypocrite lyed in this, for having asked her whether she was of *Malaga*, and she having reply'd no, he was emboldened to make her believe that those Beds were for those that came to do their Devotions, whereas he himself for his own ease had got very good Quilts and all things else necessary for a soft Bed, nay for two, that he might accommodate the private Guests he often entertained. These Things were in the Cave beneath, where he concealed the Goods which those Sons of Rapin brought him,

fore

fore against their Owners consent. He beg'd her to stay a Moment, while he went down and fetch'd wherewithal to make a very good Bed in a little retired Chamber, at some small distance from his own. They had a better Supper than *Rufina* expected: They had a Tolerable good Soup, with some boyled Mear, and Rabbet, which *Crispin* pretended had been left him by one of his Devotees, to whom he was exceedingly obliged: And there were some excellent Fruits of the Season for a Desert.

Rufina putting a constraint upon the natural Gayness of her Temper was mighty serious all Supper time, seeming to have very little Stomach to eat, through the fatigue and grief of the accident that had happened to her. The pious Hermit too appeared to have no manner of Appetite, either that he did not like the food or that he was willing to ingratiate himself with his Guest, by imitating her: He abstained from eating, but not from fixing his Eyes upon her all the while the Meal lasted. At the end of it he said the *Gratias*, as he had done the *Benedicite* at the beginning. When the Cloth was taken away Brother *Crispin* being curious to learn of *Rufina* the cause of her Brother's

ther's extream fury, beg'd her to communicate it to him, which she did in these Terms.

Though to relate the cause of my Sorrows, be to recall them a fresh; yet you, my Brother, have laid so high an Obligation upon me, that it would be ingratitude in me not to let you know what you ask: Hearken then with Patience, and I will relate it.

I was born in the City of *Almeria* of noble Parents whose Family had long flourish'd in that Place. They had no other Children besides my self and my Brother, who is a Year older than I am. My Father and Mother dyed before I was fifteen Years Old. Being young and having this Face, which you see, and which was not thought ugly, several Gentlemen sought me in Marriage, to which my Brother would never lend an Ear, always charging them with some defects, either in their Estates or in their Birth; so that not one of them cou'd succeed as he wished. I believe the real cause of this Refusal was the desire my Brother had of putting me into a Nunnery where I had two Aunts. I discovered his Intention, by their pressing me incessantly to take the Veil. For my part, it was always the least of my Thoughts; so that I never returned them

an Answer to their Satisfaction : Which vexed my Brother, and made him look upon me with an evil Eye. In the Interim, a Cavalier, who had left *Almeria* when he was a Boy, returned from *Flanders*, having by his good Service obtained first a Company of Foot and afterwards one of Horse : After which he became very desirous of visiting his native Country. Having got leave of his General he came in a very good Equipage both of Cloaths and Horses. He was tolerably Rich, and had a great many Arrears due to him in the Army for Service from the time that he left *Almeria*. He saw me one day at Church : He ask'd who I was ; and being informed, he began to have an Affection towards me, and consequently to gallant and write to me. To make short, having considered the Testimonies of Love that he gave me, the Equality there was between us as to Birth, and the excellent Qualities he was endued with, I thought my self obliged to make him some return to his Affection, and to let him into our House : Which I should never have done, had he not assured me that he design'd nothing but what was Honourable. I had then a very good Opportunity, for my Brother was at that time Sick of a vio-

lent Distemper which almost killed him (and I wish it had done it quite, I should not have been now in this melancholy Condition.) One of those that courted me, Jealous of this new Comer, who he found engrossed all my Favours to his prejudice, watch'd him so narrowly, that in a little time he saw him come in and go out of our House at disorderly Hours; he made use of this handle to revenge himself of the contempt, wherewith I used him, by giving my Brother information of what passed. One Day when he came to visit him, finding him alone, he gave him an account of all that he had seen. My Brother, who was now upon the Recovery, got up, and was soon an eye Witness of the Truth of what t'other had told him. But he could not at present take his revenge being as yet too Weak with his Illness; therefore he deferr'd it to a better Opportunity: He was extremely provoked at my having placed my affection upon that Captain, and protested that he had not been half so much concerned if it had been any body else; for he had had a quarrel with his elder Brother, and from that time they had never been well together.

My

My Brother at length entirely recovered his Health, and finding that the Captain was absent from *Almeria*, he told me he would carry me to *Malaga*, to see an Aunt of ours, who was a Nun of the Order of St. *Bernard*: Believing him to be Sincere (for I did not know that he was acquainted with what had pass'd between the Captain and me) I readily consented, and was very glad of the Journey, because I loved that Aunt, who returned my Affection by several little works which she sent me: We therefore set out each of us upon a Horse, with two Servants; when we were come near this Wood, he sent them before to take a Lodging, and at the Place where you found me, it being almost Night, he pulled me by force off my Horse, and put me into the condition wherein you saw me; and I had infallibly been murthered, if by good Fortune you had not been near to save me: He was so terrified by the Noise of your Pistol, that he fled with all his Speed, and left me tied to that Tree. May Heaven make you amends for this Charitable deed: Which while I have Life I shall remember.

Brother *Crispin* comforted his Guest as well as he was able, and offered to assist

her to the utmost of his Power: And it being late, they retired to rest. *Crispin* found himself violently enamoured of *Rufina*, and was extremely desirous of declaring his passion; but he dreaded being known for what he was. She went to the Bed which had been prepared for her, and *Crispin* to another very good one he kept concealed; for whatever Austerity he might make an outward Show of, he was at the bottom very voluptuous. He slept not a wink all the Night, revolving in his mind how he might declare his Love to his Guest. In this Condition he was found by the Day light, which was ushered in by the Pipes of the little Birds in the Neighbouring Fields: He got up, as did *Rufina* a little while afterwards: She presently went into the Chapel of the Hermitage, where she observed the good Hermit upon his Knees before the Altar. Scarce did he hear her enter, but he left his Prayer (if he was saying any at all) and turned his Head to look at her with whom he was so dreadfully smitten, that he could not help doing it. *Rufina* imitated him in his Hypocrisie, and fell upon her knees, in which posture she continu'd a good while, and much longer than she desired; for she had no great kindness for hardening her

her Knees by praying. When she saw that *Crispin* had finished his Prayer, she instantly left hers. The Brother drew near to her and said, Blessed be the Lord, my Sister in Christ, and grant you to live happy the remainder of your Days, showing down upon you as many Blessings both Ghostly and Bodily, as I wish you. Tell me, I pray, thou perfect Creature of the Almighty, how did you rest this Night? Very well, Brother, reply'd she, thro' your Kindness, though the trouble I am in gives me great disturbance. Repose, said *Crispin*, is the best Nourishment the Body of Man can receive, and I believe it is as necessary as Eating. Place your confidence in Heaven, and do not despair that this sorrow will be converted into joy. May the divine Goodness so order it, says she.

From thence they went into a little Room which had a Prospect into the Fields, and being sat down, Brother *Crispin* began in this manner: Verily, when I see Men disturbed, and even as it were transported beyond themselves by the Beauty of Women, I cannot help excusing them; because the fragil part of our Vessels always prevails, and the Heart is naturally inclined to wish for what the Eyes behold

with pleasure, especially when that Object is the most charming of all God's Works. From hence, my dear Sister, I leave you to judge what must be our thoughts of the Celestial Beauties and the Supernatural Marvels into which our Senses are not able to dive. When I quitted the World, which was at an Age when I knew no evil, I proposed as much as possibly I could, to avoid the sight of that wonderful Sex, which are justly nominated the most lovely part of the Creation: For I begun to find my self a Man, and none but Angels can help being touched with their charms: I am much more convinced of this truth at this day, than I was in that age of innocence; and I too well perceive that I must speedily fly from you, if I would avoid falling into the Net which the Devil spreads before me. All that I have said, Madam, is only to let you see, that Beauty is very dangerous, and that I find my Soul to be in great peril since I beheld yours. Be not alarm'd, I pray you, to hear me talk thus: I own it is a little improper for the Habit I wear and the profession I have embraced; but I am still a Man, and consequently subject to all humane Infirmities.

Having

Having done speaking he for the first time affected a Blush, which in reality he was never capable of. *Rufina* counterfeited a Modesty of the same Stamp; but as Opportunity now knocked at her door, she would not refuse to let it in, but made him this reply: Though I very well know I am not of the number of those whose Beauty can give uneasiness to Mankind, I confess, my good Brother, that I am of your mind in this point: For the power of Beauty is so irresistible, that I my self am overcome by it like other Folks, and take delight in nothing more than in viewing an agreeable Face, and admiring its effects; and therefore I do not wonder that Men are reduced to some extremity when they are passionately in Love, since Beauty acts with such extraordinary force. I as little wonder it should have the same effect upon those that are retired from the World as it has upon those who are the most engaged in it, because they are not so perfect as to be entirely purified from humane passions: And I am now much more sensible of the Obligation I lie under to you, than I was before, since I hear that the favour you have done me has been at the expence of your Repose, and to the hazard of your

Reputation. I could heartily wish I were not the unhappy cause of this disorder; but as there is no body hears you but my self, you may be assured of my Secrecy. For the rest, as you desired to know the History of my Adventures, I beg you not to conceal yours from me, but to tell me what could oblige you to quit the World so early, and to throw your self into so Solitary and so austere a way of living: For though I plainly see you did it for the Salvation of your Soul; yet I have observed in you such Qualifications as might have gained you esteem in your Youth, and have made you defer the execution of so painful an enterprize to another Season.

Rufina spoke in this as the false Hermit could have wished, and in Ecstasy of pleasure he took courage to tell her, that her Charms were so irresistible, and had gained so absolute a Dominion over him, that from the Hour she had taken refuge in his Cell, he had had no repose for the passion she had inspired him with. *Rufina* did not assume an air of too much Cruelty upon this, but excused him in consideration of humane frailty: And besides, she was unwilling to deprive him of all Hopes, which might have frustrated the designs
she

she came upon : So that he seem'd the most satisfied Man upon Earth. *Rufina* for two days together pretended to be ill, and kept her Bed, where she was treated by her Host with the most exquisite Viands, which were brought him in the night time by his Comrades in what quantity he pleased. The Reader may wonder that *Rufina* should be so bold as to stay alone in such a Solitude with a man whose Character she so well knew ; but she was sufficiently acquainted with the passion he had for her ; and rightly judging that perfect Love is never without Respect, she did not need have any apprehension of any violence from him. What made her the more secure was, the Hope she fed him with, that as soon as ever she heard her Brother was not at *Malaga*, she should give a favourable ear to his Addresses ; but that the trouble she was in, not being well assured that she should not be discovered in that place, made her unable to acknowledge as she ought the Merit that was in him, and with which she was every day more and more charmed. In this manner she gulled this Spiritual Gallant, who to hasten his happiness, promised on his side to use his utmost endeavours, by means of his Friends, to know if her Brother was still at *Malaga*.

That very Night, the three Brothers in Iniquity, our holy Hermits most intimate Friends, came to his Cell, with a purchase of above two thousand Crowns in Gold, which was what they had promised themselves the night before, when they retired into the Wood, where *Garay* had over heard their whole Contrivance, but which they could not execute till the following Night, because this Sum was in two great Bags, in Pistoles and Quadruples, which *Crispin* had discovered in a House in the Town, where he had often received Charity, and not being able, by reason of the great Rains, to do their Job in the day time as they intended, they contented themselves with making a little Boy slip into the house where the Money lay, who at midnight opened the door to them.

The moment these three Rogues had got the Money they brought it to the Hermitage. *Crispin*, being unwilling they should see his fair Guest, received them into his Chamber, where they stayed during supper time. They discoursed of divers things. Among the rest there was one, who having abandoned his Studies, had given himself to that infamous Course of Life, not considering the Family he was descended

descended from, nor his Qualifications which were really very good. This Man was admired by them all for their best Companion: So that *Crispin*, for their diversion and that they might not go to Bed so soon after Supper, begg'd him to tell them some story or Novel; for he remembered an infinite number: And he ask'd it, in some measure, to divert *Rufina*, who from the Room where she was, could hear every word that passed: Which *Crispin* was not very uneasy about; for he put so much confidence in her, that he did not care if she knew all his Secrets. She was extremely rejoiced to find that *Crispin* was the concealer of so honourable a Society, and she was now fully satisfied that they were the same as those whom *Garay* had over heard in the Wood. The Spark that *Crispin* had requested to tell them some Novel, related what follows.

Don Philip, a Gentleman of very high Quality, was Born at *Villa-franca*, an Ancient City upon the Confines of *Galicja*: He was descended from a very Noble Family, and was brought up in his own Country, with his Elder-Brother *Don Lodwick*, and a Sister nam'd *Donna Cornelia*: But his Father and Mother leaving this
World

World e're he was full fifteen Years of Age, he was forc'd into that Course of Life, which is commonly takn by the younger Brothers of Noble Houses, who have not much left them, and with the little Money he could get together, he went to Trail a Pike in *Flanders*. He behav'd himself so Gallantly there upon several Occasions, that he got the Colours of a Company of Foot, and after other successful Encounters against the *Dutch*, he was advanc'd to the Command of the same Company. Having afterwards, in that Charge, made yet greater demonstrations of his Conduct, and Valour, he was honoured at length with the Order of the Knights of *Alcantara*, with an assurance of the first Commandry, that should be void, belonging to that Order.

Having obtain'd that, he still continu'd his Military Employments, till such time as there was a Cessation of Arms made between the King and his Enemies of the Low-countries, to last a Year and a Day. This Opportunity, together with the News he receiv'd out of *Spain*, of his Elder Brother's Death, oblig'd him to desire leave to make a Journey into his Country, where two Children his Brother had left,
and

and his own Sister, stood in need of his Presence; the former to be protected by him, the latter to be dispos'd of in Marriage.

Don Philip arriv'd at *Villa-franca*, a Fortnight after his Sister's departure to *Villadolid*, where the Court was then, with an Aunt of his, a Widow, his Father's Sister, who would needs have her along with her. This old Lady, who had a great Kindness for her, having resolv'd to leave her all she had at her Death, in hopes she might, with those Advantages, meet with a better Match.

As soon as *Don Philip* was come into his Country, he took Order about his Brother's Estate, and the Tuition of his Nephews, whom he left in the Custody of an Ancient Kinsman of his, whom having entrusted with the Care of their Education and Maintenance, he resolv'd to go and Visit his Sister at *Villadolid*. As he was setting things in Order for his Journey, passing through the broad Place of *Villa-franca*, he saw abundance of people going towards an Inn, which was at the end of it, accompanying two Litters, in one whereof, there was an Old Gentleman; and in that which follow'd, a young Lady, whose transcendent Beauty heightned

heightn'd by the sumptuousness of her Attire, ravish'd the Eyes, and Hearts of all that beheld her, but above all those of *Don Philip*: He was so inflam'd by that Transient Sight of her, that, covering with his Cloak the Order he was of, he followed the Litter, so transported out of himself, that he reflected not on what those who observ'd him might say of his Demeanour. He saw her lighting at the Inn-gate; and if he was before rais'd into a kind of Astonishment at the Beauty of her Face, he was now no less, at the handsomeness of her Body, the Magnificence of her Apparel, and the sweetness of her Complexion. In a word, he was reduc'd to such an Extremity, by the Passion he immediately felt in himself for her, that he made enquiry, and set himself to find out, who that Miracle of Perfection might be, who had so of a sudden surpriz'd his Heart, and attain'd so absolute a disposal of his Liberty.

He was soon satisfi'd, as to that particular; for meeting with one of her Servants, going from the Inn towards the Market-place, he with much Civility ask'd him, who that Old Gentleman was, and whither he was then going? The other, who understood Civility well enough return'd

turn'd him this Answer : *The Gentleman whose Name you are so desirous to know, and who is my Master, is called the Marquis Grimani, a Person of the highest Rank next to Sovereign Princes, who comes into Spain, an ordinary Ambassadour, from the Emperour of Germany, to his most Catholick Majesty : He brings along with him his Beautiful Daughter, the Lady Eleanora, to be Married to Henricus, his Excellency's Nephew, who is at the present at Villadolid, a Gentleman of extraordinary Worth, who in the Flower of his Youth left Germany, to go and see Foreign Countries. He has travell'd all over Europe, and is now resolv'd to make his abode in Spain, having already continued some time at Court, with a very great Train, and is very highly in Favour with his Catholick Majesty, and well respected by all the Nobility about the Court ; nay his Generosity and excellent Conversation has acquired him the Esteem of all the greatest Persons in this Country. This Marriage of Signior Henrick, had been treated of in Germany with this Lady Eleanora, the only Daughter of my Master, who leaving his Country upon the being Honoured by the Emperour with the present Embassy, has solicited the Business with great earnestness ; so that his Imperial Majesty seems desirous that this Match should go forward.*

We

We came by Sea, but had such distress of Weather, that we were like to be cast away several times, While we were in that Danger, my Master, a Gentleman much inclin'd to Devotion, made a Vow that if he escap'd, through the Intercession of the Glorious Patron of Spain, he would visit the Place where his Sacred Body lies buried, so well known all over the World, for the great Miracles daily done there. Being come to Villadolid, my Master continu'd there fifteen Days, during which time, all things were agreed upon, in order to the Marriage. That great Affair being concluded, he would needs perform his Vow, and go to St. James's. His Nephew Henrick is not come along with him, but stays at Villadolid, to send to Rome for the Dispensation; for the Lady Eleanora, and Seignior Henrick are Cousin-Germans. Thus Sir, I think I have satisfi'd your Desire, as to the Question you put to me.

Don Philip gave the Servant many thanks for the Account he had given him of his Master, and assur'd him he would requite his Kindness, if it lay in his Power, and so took leave. This Discourse happen'd after Night, as they walk'd over the Market-place; it being so dark as that the Marquess's Servant could not take any particular notice of Don Philip, who did
all

all he could to avoid being discover'd. The Account he had receiv'd, that the Beauty, which had stolen away his Heart at the first Sight, was already engag'd, and within a short time to be Married; caus'd him to return home a much sadder Man than he went out. This Affliction, with the Love which he already had for her, bereav'd him of all Rest. That very Night, he would needs go and see the Marquess and his Daughter at Supper, yet so as he might not be perceived by them. The Master of the House plac'd him so as that he might see all at his ease, yet not be seen himself; and this was to leap out of the Frying pan into the Fire. The next Day, the Marquess went thence, so as that *Don Philip* saw not the Lady *Eleanora* any more that time: Nor was he much troubled at it, for having in the Night advis'd with his Pillow, to find out some Remedy for his Disquiet, he found it necessary, that he should not be seen, either by the Marquess, or his Daughter, or any one belonging to them, that he might the better compass a Design, which only Love could inspire him withal.

The Kingdom of *Galicia*, is very full of Mountains, and consequently the way to *St. James's* must be troublesome to Travel.

Travel ; so that the Marques could make but short Journeys, whence *Don Philip* inferr'd, that he could not be back in less than twenty Days ; presuming he would make some abode at *Compostella*, to do his Devotions, and refresh himself, e're he set out for his Return. Accordingly, he dispos'd of his Affairs in order to the Design he had bethought himself of, and taking leave of all his Acquaintance, he went to *Pont ferrada*, a Town which lay four Leagues further from the Court, than *Villa franca*. He took up his Quarters at an Inn, whence he stirr'd not in the Day-time, but only took the Air a little in the Night, yet with such a Caution as not to be known to any : He discover'd himself to none of the Inhabitants, but only his Landlord, whom he acquainted with his Quality, and the Design which brought him thither. He was attended only by a Servant whose Fidelity and Courage he had many years Experienc'd ; for he had serv'd him as a Soldier, and waited on him, from the time of his first Departure from *Villa-franca*. *Marco* (so was this faithful Servant nam'd) perceiving his Master more Melancholy than he was wont to be, and that somewhat kept him from resting in the Night ; for he heard him disquietly
turning

turning in his Bed, and sighing ever and anon; he imagin'd that the Cause of his Disturbance was not at *Pont-ferrada*, inasmuch as if it had been, he would not have failed, Night or Day, to discover by his Visits, what could not be known by his Disquiets and Sighs. Thus this discreet Lover not discovering any thing of his secret Passion, *Marco*, could not guess at the Occasions which bred such a distraction in his Mind: Nay, though he did all that lay in his Power to pry into it, yet could he never meet with any Satisfaction. One Day, finding his Master all alone, and not able to endure that Reservedness in him any longer, he thus spoke to him.

I should never have imagin'd, Sir, that you could be guilty of so great a Closeness towards a Servant, whom you have ever found Faithful, and to love you even beyond his own Life. You have heretofore thought me worthy the knowledge of your most important Secrets. Pardon me, if I presume to tell you, that your Silence now gives me just Cause to conceive, That you have not the same thoughts of me, and that I must be guilty of some Crime, whereof I have not my self the least apprehensions. Wherein, I pray Sir, have I offended you? You must needs harbour some ill

ill thoughts of me, since you conceal from me the Disquiets which deprive you of all Appetite or Rest. Sure they proceed from Love, or I am mightily mistaken. You close not your Eyes all Night, and spend the Day in Retirement, avoiding all Society, and giving yourself up to perpetual Solitude, and Melancholy; which I am extremely troubled to see. You have left your Country, telling your Friends, that you were going to Court; whereas you continue in an obscure Place, where you are afraid to be known. 'Tis impossible for me to forbear grieving at it, as long as I am Ignorant of the Cause: Pardon my Curiosity, Sir, which however impertinent, is an Argument of my Fidelity, and Readiness to serve you. I know it is the Duty of a good and faithful Servant, punctually and implicitly to Obey the Commands of his Master, without insinuating himself further into his Secrets, than he is willing he should be acquainted therewith. I have hitherto kept myself within those Bounds, and have so liv'd with you as that I fear not any Reproach you can make me. But now at last, my ancient Fidelity gives me the boldness to ask you, what Business may have brought you to this Place? What occasions your Disquiet, and what you intend to do in this obscure Inn, where you admit not of any Enjoyments? Have you a greater Confidence

fidence of the happy Master of this House,
 whom you have known but within this four
 Days, than of an old Servant, of whose Zeal
 and Fidelity you have had so many Experi-
 ences? You have hitherto thought my Advice
 worth the asking, nay have follow'd it, in
 things, for ought I know, of as great impor-
 tance as this. Marco having thus ended
 his Complaint, his Master conceiv'd him-
 self oblig'd to make him some Answer,
 which was this: *Marco, I must confess, I*
have looked on thee, and that justly as my
Friend; a Title I may well allow one who has
shar'd with me in War the Dangers, in Peace
the Enjoyments, I have been engag'd in. It
is a very hard thing, not to say impossible,
that any Man should in the disposal of himself,
take a Course contrary to that intended him by
Heaven; though it be said, that a Wise man
shall have dominion over the Stars: That is,
(as Astrologers expound it) Humane Prudence,
shall elude the Decrees of Fate. I am Born to
love a Beauty, which surprizing my Heart,
has withal possess'd it self of all the Faculties
of my Soul. I find my self no longer Master
of my own Liberty; that I am not able to
make the least disposal of my Will, and so it
were a Madness for me, to oppose the Inclina-
tion, whereto the Sovereign Powers have made
me subject. I suffer my self to be foolishly
carried

carried away by my Passion, though I know well enough that I attempt a thing absolutely impossible and beyond my Strength: This is the Cause of my Disquiet, *Musing*, and *Melancholy* spending the Nights without Rest, and the Days in Solitude, suffering a thousand Afflictions which I cannot express; and loving where I am not to hope the least return of Love, by reason of an Invincible Obstacle that lies in my way. This is that which destroys my Enjoyments, and poisons all my Pleasures.

I have seen that Divine Beauty, that Mortal Angel, that Prodigy of Miracles, who pass'd through our Town with her Father the Marquess Grimani: The excellent Endowments she is Mistress of, and which thou may'st have admir'd as well as my self, are all the Excuses I can alludge for the blindness of my Passion; but they feed it not with any Hope. There is an Obstacle lies between me, and the possession of her, which I shall find it impossible to remove. This transcendent Beauty is already made sure to a Gentleman of great Worth, who is her Cousin-german, named Henrick; and methinks, I see her ready to joyn Hands with him. I hear such high Commendations of his Excellent Parts, that I find the little Hope I had, ready to leave me. I love her, or to say better, I Adore her; and if I may
judge

judge by the present Agitations of my Heart, I may say, it will never be disingag'd from the Passion I have for her. I know it is Madness in me to think of her, and that I cannot without Extravagance, ever hope she may be mine, to the disappointment of a young Lord, who with the Advantages of Blood, has all those of Nature : Nay, I think it almost impossible, to find out some means to acquaint her with my Love, and to get a Letter convey'd to her. I know that the Houses, whence I derive my Extraction, are not inferiour to those of Grimani and Henrick ; and consequently, that I am as Nobly descended as she is ; that would not be the greatest Obstacle, if I could but make my self known at Court. I hear that she intends thither, when she returns from her Pilgrimage. I have but three Months to carry on this Business which is the Time requisite to get the Dispensation from Rome.

I have a long time consider'd with my self of the means, how I might get Access to her ; and that I conceive the most likely to take, is to counterfeit, what indeed is but too real, a certain distraction of Mind : By acting the Mad Man's Part, I might so disguise my Extravagances, as that the Father, pleas'd with my Humour, may perhaps carry me along with him to the Court. This certainly, is a Design fantastick enough, and not only contrary

to my *Quality*, but absolutely opposite to my *Opinion*. I should endeavour to raise my self in the *World*. I have a great *Confidence*, that at Court I shall be known to very few, because I have been a long time out of *Spain*. Besides these *Considerations*, the *Habit* I will put on, being altogether extravagant; I shall be so disguis'd, that my nearest *Friends* and *Relations* will hardly know me. If by this means, I can get into the *Marquess's House*, I shall hope the *Plot* will take: For I have heard this *Lady* is not fully satisfied with the *Marriage*, having understood that her *Cousin* is a *Person* of a debauch'd *Life*, and inclin'd to *Women*; and that she admits of his *Addresses* only out of *Obedience* to her *Father*. I have communicated my *Design* to the *Master* of the *House*, as being a discreet *Person*, who may serve me, and puts me in hopes to get me into the *Marquess's Service*, when he comes to give him an *Account* of my pleasant *Extravagances*, as we have already agreed together. Thus, my dear *Marco*, have I given thee a faithful *Character* of my self; thou know'st now as much as I do, as well of my *Affliction*, as my *Love*; mistrust not the *Confidence* I have of thee, and assist me with all thy *Wit* and *Industry*, or expect e're long to be a *Witness* of my *Departure* out of this *World*.

Marco

Marco out of Compliance with his Master, approv'd of the Project, though he doubted much the Success of it. He saw his Master was too far transported to receive any prudent Advice; so that he promis'd to assist him according to the Design he had laid to get Access to his Mistress, and troubled not his Thoughts with any thing but how to compass it. It was his Business therefore to get Cloaths made for *Don Philip*, suitable to his Extravagance. He put him into a Cassock after the old Fashion, with Puffs at the Sleeves of Green-Satin, and large Skirts, a Cloak somewhat like a Rocket, very short, and a *Milan*-Cap of green Plush. Being thus disguised, he chang'd his Quarters, and went to the Host's Brother's House, who also must of necessity be acquainted with the Secret. All this could not be done without some yellow Pieces, whereof he had brought good Store out of *Flanders*, with some Jewels of Value he had gotten by Gaming, at which he was very Fortunate.

About this time the Marquess, with the Beautiful Lady his Daughter, were upon their Return from their Pilgrimage. Before they got to *Pont-ferrada*, the Beams of his Litter broke, so that he was forc'd

to come to the Town on Horseback, and to stay there two Days, while the Litter was mended. The Marquess took up the same Inn where *Don Philip* had lodged, as being the best in the Town. The Host being taught what he had to say to the Marquess, for the furtherance of *Don Philip's* Design, soon met with an Opportunity to do it. For as most Persons of Quality, when they Travel, are very inquisitive to know what is Rare or Remarkable at the Places through which they pass; the Marquess desirous to hear what there might be at *Pont-ferrada*, call'd for the Host. Having travell'd several times before into *Spain*, he spoke the Language very well, was a very sociable Person and glad of Company.

The Host being come into the Room, he began to ask him concerning the Antiquities of the Town, the Illustrious Families that had liv'd in it, the Disposition of the Inhabitants, the Beauty of the Ladies, and such Particulars: Wherein the Host satisfi'd him, giving him a very exact Account of all he knew. Among the Antiquities, and Remarkable things of the Town, he came to speak of *Don Philip*, telling such Stories of him as might raise a Desire in the Marquess to see him.

There

There is come, (said he to him) within these fifteen Days, a very rare Person to this Town, fantastically clad in green Stuff; but there is a greater Extravagance in his Behaviour than there is in his Cloaths, and yet in the height of his Distraction, there may be observ'd certain shadows of Understanding and Stayedness, which render him excellent good Company. Being ask'd by some of our Inhabitants, who he was, I am (said he) Son to the River Sill, which passes by the Walls of this Town, and descended from one of the most illustrious Families of Galicia. He expects to be called your Honour, and your Lordship in Discourse, and goes by the Title of Knight of the Noble Order of Prim-roses.

The Fooleries he tells to make good the Title he assumes, are so ridiculous, that they force Laughter from the most Melancholy. He seldom comes out of his Lodging, Feeds high, and we cannot imagine whence we should have means to live at that Rate. He has a Servant to wait on him, who knows the length of his Foot, and complies with him in his Madness, either for his Advantage, or else he has a soft place in his Head, as well as his Master; and I think 'em both very well worth your Observation. I wonder the Knight has not been yet to wait on your Excellency, for he is mighty desirous to converse with Strangers, and finds

them out as soon as he hears of their Arrival.

The Marquess, was much pleas'd with this Relation of the Host, and desir'd him to bring him acquainted with that Noble Knight. The fair Lady *Eleanora* express'd also a Desire to see him, for she had been present at the Host's Discourse. He gladly satisfi'd them, being over-joy'd the Prologue of the Design had taken so well. He went to his Brother's to fetch him, having before told the Ambassadour, that he must Treat him Honourably, if he expected to make any Sport with him; inasmuch, as being extremely Self-conceited in his Madness, he would be put out of all Humour, if he were entertained with any Dis-respect, or Indifferency.

The Marquess, who was a Person naturally inclin'd to Mirth and Civility, promis'd him he would observe his Directions. Whereupon, the Host marches away for *Don Philip*, who came into the Room very humorously in his Fool's Coat, making wry Mouths, and some fantastick Gestures, the Introduction to his future Extravagance. The Ambassadour; how serious soever he would appear, as being oblig'd by his Quality to dissemble, could not forbear Laughing, to see him in that Equipage,

Equipage, attended by *Marco*, who on the other side, Acted very well the Part that had been given him. He went to receive him at the Chamber-door, with this Compliment : *Welcome the Noblest piece of Gallantry that ever Spain saw : Welcome the Mirrour of all the brave Knights that ever were Celebrated for their Heroick Actions. The News your Excellency tells me, (reply's Don Philip) deserves not the Reward that may be expected for it : You are extremely mistaken, if you think your self the first of those who have admir'd Nature's Prodigality towards me in Excellent Parts and Endowments. Give me the Favour at least, (answers the Marquess) to be one of the most faithfull Witnesses thereof, which no doubt I shall, if you please-but to honour me a while with your sweet Company. For as a rich Diamond, pleases all the World, so the Attractions of your Countenance, and the transcendent Insinuation of your Behaviour force the Admiration of all that see you.*

Don Philip was by this time got near the fair Lady *Eleanora*. Whereupon looking with a certain Astonishment on her Miraculous Beauty, *My Lord Marquess*, (said he to him) *I beseech you forbear at present the Praises you are pleas'd to give me, for it were to prophane those which are due to this Excellent*

L 3

Creature.

Creature. I pray let me know whether she be your Daughter; for if she be, you will be much concern'd in the Elogies I shall give this Miracle. Her coming into the World, was to Embellish our Hemisphere, to supply Cupid with fresh Darts, to become the Load-stone of Hearts, the Delight of the Eyes, the Astonishment of the Universe, the Master-piece of Heaven, and the Miracle of Nature: By the Noble Order of Knighthood I am of, I swear, That the very Minute I first cast my Eye on this Accomplish'd Beauty, I found my Heart was grown rebellious, and no longer mine; my Will bereav'd of all Freedom; and my Soul become absolute her Slave. In a Word, Sir, I think my self somewhat different from what I was before, and the more I feel my self, the more I am astonish'd at the strange Metamorphosis.

The Commendations you give me, renowned Knight, (replies the Lady) smell too much of Flattery, I am Confident you do not your self believe one half of what you have said, and therefore it will be hard for you to perswade me to it. You consider not that you act against your own Sentiment, when you speak against your Conscience. I should never advise a Gallant, who would raise himself an Esteem with the Ladies, to hazard his own Disappointment by so ill a Prologue; for to give undeserved

deserved Praises breeds a suspicion of Imperfections ; and to be forc'd to make use of Falsehood brings Truth into question. The Truth I tell you, (replies the Amorous Extravagant) is such, so pure, so clear, and so far from all suspicion of being otherwise, that you shall ever find it as plainly in my Mouth as in your own Looking-glass. Be not so hasty, Honourable Knight, (says the Lady to him) be pleas'd to take a Chair, for we desire to Discourse with you at leisure : Were it Heaven's pleasure, Madam, (says Don Philip, as soon as he was sat) that I might ever continue near you : But I see the Honour you are pleas'd to do me will be but short, and my Joy soon be over ; for I understand, that within two Days you leave this Place, and if you go without me, I shall Die out of pure Grief : In the mean time, give me leave to look on this Mansion as the Empyreal Heaven : since so great a Deity has Honour'd it with her Presence. We forget all Civility, (says the Marquess) when we fall into other Discourse, before you have first entertain'd us with your own Noble Adventures, that we may thereby know what Respects we ought to pay your Worth. There is not any due to me Sir, (replies the disguis'd Cavalier) but that the Service I have vow'd you, may be the better receiv'd, I will give you an Account of my Extraction, and

relate to you the perfect History of my Life hitherto; be pleased to afford your Attention to what I shall say.

The Kingdom of *Galicia*, was heretofore Govern'd by Counts, and afterwards by Kings. *Gondamor* Reign'd in that time, and continu'd a Widower after the Burial of his first Wife, by whom he had no other Children but the *Infanta Theodora*, who coming to Reign after him was call'd the Wenching-Queen : She fell in Love with the Gallant *Cialto*, one of the Richest and most prosperous Persons in the Kingdom : He ever kept about the Court, and was a Kinsman, (tho' somewhat afar off) to the King, but his principal Favourite, by which means he had access into the *Infanta's* Chamber, and got of her that Favour whereby Mankind is propagated. I prov'd to be the Issue of that Amorous Union; and the good Hour of my Birth happen'd at a time that the King chanc'd to be at his Daughter's Lodging. The Pains of Child-birth surpriz'd her, and being a Novice in such Adventures, she could not dissemble her Labour, even in the Presence of her Father, who imagin'd it was some other Accident had happen'd to her : Her Women help'd her to Bed, not knowing the Disease that troubled

bled her; but not long after I came into the World it seems, to run through all the Misfortunes that have happen'd to me since.

Being receiv'd into the World by a faithful Servant, who knew of my Mother's Amours, she took me in her Lap, to be deliver'd to a Brother of hers, who was also acquainted with the Business. As she went out of the *Infanta's* Lodging, she meets with the King, going to visit his Daughter. She was afraid his Curiosity would have prompted him to examine what she had in her Lap; which made her turn back of a sudden, and by a secret Pair of Stairs, go down into the Garden, where having dispos'd of me into a little Wicker-basket, she put me into the River *Sill*, which ran by the Wall thereof, and told the *Infanta* that she had deliver'd me to her Brother, as they had resolv'd. I was carried a while on the Crystal-waves of that clear River; but at last, the Water growing somewhat rough, I sunk, and was receiv'd into the Arms of the God of that River, who encompass'd by his Fair Nymphs, conducted me into his own Crystal-Palace.

You may perhaps imagine this Discourse a feign'd Story taken out of the Inventions of the

Poets ; but give me leave to assure you, that
 the Business happen'd no otherwise than as I
 tell you. I was brought up by the Nymphs
 in that Secret Mansion, and instructed by
 the God of the River, who wish'd I might
 prove worthy so Noble an Education.
 He caus'd me to be instructed in all manner
 of Sciences, and spar'd no Pains to make
 me an Accomplish'd Person. I learnt
 three or four Languages, but particularly
 the *Latine* above any of the others. Being
 arriv'd to the twentieth Year of my Age,
 Love, to shew his Omnipotency, and that
 all Places are under his Jurisdiction, caus'd
 his Flames to fasten on me even through
 the Water. In that Virginal Company
 of Nymphs, there was one, for whom the
 God of that Watery Habitation had a par-
 ticular Esteem ; and she deserv'd it, for
 she very much excell'd all her Companions.
 Her Name was *Anacarsia* : Her Endow-
 ments were extraordinary, and her Beauty
 beyond all Comparison. In Complexion
 and Stature she came somewhat near this
 fair Lady your Daughter, and had the
 same Advantage over the rest of the
 Nymphs, as the *Delphick-Torch* has over
 the other Planets. She played excellently
 well on all kinds of Instruments ; to sum
 up all in a Word, she was a Prodigy of
 all

all Perfections. I fell so passionately in Love with this Beauty, that I had not a Minute's rest, from the time that little Deity had Wounded my Heart, with the Mortal Darts of her sparkling Eyes.

I found it a hard Business to discover my Love to her, in regard I could never meet her alone: She was perpetually haunted by some of those who liv'd in that Chrystal Palace: They follow'd her every where, and would never be out of her Sight. But one Day, when all the other Nymphs were gone to a Musick-meeting, at which were also to be read certain Lectures of Poesie, being the ordinary Diversifements of the God of that River; the Divine *Anacarsia*, purposely pretended some Indisposition, to give me an Opportunity to speak with her. She sent me notice of it, by one who came to tell me from her, that she kept her Bed only for my sake, than which I could not have expected a kinder Compliment from one of her Sex. I went to her Chamber, and found her carelessly laid on a Bed of Moss, exceeding in whiteness the fine Sheets she lay on, and disputing as to Splendour and Light, with the Sun, who then beheld her. I was startled at the Sight of so many
 Charms,

Charms, and was upon the Point of loosing all Sense; an Effect Natural enough in those who are truly touched with Love. But recovering my self a while, though still much troubled, and my Tongue but as it were newly loosened, I took the Confidence to make this Discourse to her.

“ Adorable Nymph, the Glory of these
 “ deep Habitations, but the unavoidable
 “ rack of those Hearts, which are capti-
 “ vated by your Beauty, my Soul, since
 “ the first time I saw you, is absolutely
 “ disposed to serve you; I have no power
 “ over it, it is wholly yours, and glories
 “ in its Slavery. Treat it as a thing that be-
 “ longs to you, and as I have vowed it to
 “ you with an inviolable Fidelity. You
 “ have done me an extraordinary Favour
 “ in allowing me to declare the Amorous
 “ Passion I have for you: May I further
 “ hope, that you will allay it; and if I
 “ should be admitted to that Degree of Fe-
 “ licity, should I not be the Happiest and
 “ most Glorious of all Men?

The fair *Anacarsia*, infinitely pleased with so obliging a Discourse, and the Worth she observ'd in me, highly honour'd me with her Affection, and comply'd with my Amorous Desires, in such
 sweet.

sweet and melting Expressions, as put me
 in hopes of the happy Accomplishment of
 my Love. But it was not long e're our
 Discourse was interrupted by the God of
 the River, who finding neither of us at the
 Meeting, came streight to her Chamber,
 and sunk in so softly, that he over-heard
 some part of our Amorous Conference ;
 which so incens'd him against me, that he
 immediately resolv'd to give a check to my
 Presumption. He laid Siege, with his
 clear Waters, to the Chamber of *Anacarsia*,
 and e're he had quite Damm'd up the
 Door, he cast me out with such violence,
 that he threw me to the Bank of the River.
 I presently heard a Voice saying unto me,
 " *Guadomarus*, thou art descended from
 " Kings, though it be a long time since
 " they have had Scepters in their Hands ;
 " Princes of another Family have displac'd
 " them. Thou art born a *Pagan*, chuse
 " what Law thou thinkest best ; if thou
 " wilt follow my Advice, take that which
 " is observ'd in this Kingdom, under
 " which liv'd thy Illustrious Ancestors.
 " I have justly banish'd thee out of my
 " Dominions, because it was not fit I
 " should suffer prophane Love to be made
 " to a Nymph, who had vowed her Cha-
 " stity to me as I had mine to her. I
 " have

“ have promised her my Protection and
 “ Assistance in all things. Keep hencefor-
 “ ward within thy Kingdom, and assure
 “ thy self I with thy Good and Advance-
 “ ment ; so far am I from doing thee any
 “ prejudice. Whithersoever Fortune shall
 “ dispose of thee, be Confident, thou
 “ wilt not be out of the reach of my
 “ Care.

With these Words the waters of the
 River, seem'd to stir themselves into a
 gentle Curl, which being presently laid,
 it became as smooth as it had been before.
 I immediately found my self (by what Ad-
 venture I know not) in a pleasant Garden,
 in the midst of a Bed of fine Prim-roses,
 which I look'd on as a good Omen, and
 thought my self oblig'd to derive my Name
 thence. Afterwards at my Baptism, I
 took the Name of *Peter Blasco of Galicia*,
 taking the Surname from the Kingdom
 which had been heretofore in the Possession
 of my Predecessors, who have been dead
 this Four hundred Years, as I have found
 in History. Besides that Name, I have
 taken, an Additional Title, that of *Knight
 of the Noble Order of Prim-roses*. I have
 assumed it my self ; for an Illustrious *Hero*,
 as I am, may be his own Herald, and by
 what Appellations he pleases raise him-
 self

self above the Sphere of the common sort of People.

“ Thus have I given your Excellency
 “ an Account who I am and discovered to
 “ you my true Original. If the Qualities
 “ and Endowments I own, deserve the
 “ Honour to be receiv’d into your Alli-
 “ ance, give me leave, O most Illustrious
 “ Marquess, to make my Addresses to
 “ this Super-Cœlestial Beauty, this Mira-
 “ cle of our Age, whom Nature has hu-
 “ morously pleas’d to frame for the De-
 “ light of the Eyes, and torment of
 “ Hearts. I only expect your good Will,
 “ give it me, I beseech you, and thereby
 “ satisfy my extraordinary Passion. I
 “ think you so generous, that you will not
 “ deny it me, if you consider, that grant-
 “ ing it not, you bereave me of my Life,
 “ which you know is the most Illustrious
 “ of any in *Europe*; and are consequently
 “ satisfied, that the World, losing in me,
 “ the most Renowned Knight it ever had,
 “ must withal lose the worthiest Kinsman
 “ of his Catholick Majesty.

He deliver’d these last Words, with
 such pleasant Gestures, the better to ex-
 press the Violence of his Passion, that
 both the Marquess and his Daughter had
 much ado to forbear Laughing. *Marco*
 was

was astonish'd to see the Force of that Passion, which of an Accomplish'd Gentleman made a Ridiculous Laughing-Stock; and could turn a Person of Eminent Parts and Judgment, into a Counterfeit Extravagant: for if he had not pretended the loss of his Wits, he had lost all the hopes of his Love; and he could not have gotten near so Fair a Lady, upon any Account but that of Madness.

The Marquess composing his Countenance to more Seriousness, return'd him this Answer. "*Seignior Don Pedro Blasco,*
 " the most Illustrious, and only Knight
 " of the most Noble Order of *Prim-roses,*
 " I am extremely pleased with the Knowledge you have given me of your Person, and the Account you have entertain'd me with of your Miraculous Birth, and Noble Education: Had a Person, less Illustrious than your self, acquainted me therewith, I should have mistrusted his Discourse, and imagin'd he told me Fables: But a Person of your Worth and Quality, ought to be credited in all things. What further Confirms me in the Truth thereof, is, that he is no less than a Prince who speaks to me. Believe me, I have a great Respect for your rare Qualities, and such an Honour

"nour for your Person, that I would
 "assure you my own is wholly at your
 "Service. I have that Esteem for your
 "Friendship, that I shall endeavour the
 "continuance of it while I live. I wish
 "my self a natural Inhabitant of this King-
 "dom, that I might have the greater
 "Opportunities to further your Satis-
 "faction. I shall stay here but till such
 "time as his Imperial Majesty shall send
 "Order for my Return ; but during the
 "Abode I shall make here, command me
 "in any thing that lies in my Power : As
 "for the permission you Desire, to make
 "your Addresses to my Daughter, I from
 "this time give it you, and I allow her to
 "accept of it, and to entertain you kind-
 "ly ; but she is already made sure to a
 "Cousin of hers, and I have sent to *Rome*
 "for a Dispensation, which once come,
 "the Marriage will be concluded : This
 "Obstacle lies in your way, and you will
 "find it a hard matter to remove it. I
 "am sorry I had not the happiness of your
 "Acquaintance before ; for how gladly
 "would I have embrac'd the honour of
 "having a Son-in-Law of your Worth
 "and Quality, and to see my Family allied
 "to the Blood Royal of *Galicia* ? The
 "end of most Courtships is Marriage ; of
 "yours

“ yours you see it cannot be : To address
 “ your self to my Daughter upon any o-
 “ ther Account, I know you would not :
 “ The Husband she expects is a Person of
 “ so much Gallantry, as not to receive
 “ any such Affront.

Our disguis'd Extravagant broke forth
 into great Resentments upon his obliging
 Discourse, which made excellent Sport for
 all that were present. But having laugh'd
 their fill, the Marquess and his Daughter
 could not forbear making Charitable Re-
 flections on that strange kind of Distraction.
 It pity'd them to see a Gentleman every
 way so Accomplish'd, fallen into such un-
 heard of Extravagance, as to alledge him-
 self descended from a River, and brought
 up in it Five hundred Years before : While
 some that were present, purposely to urge
 him to speak, oppos'd the Stories he had
 told them, and he endeavour'd to give
 them Satisfaction ; the Marquess ac-
 quainted his Daughter with a Design that
 came into his Mind, which was to carry
Don Pedro along with him to the Court ;
 it being likely he would find them excellent
 Sport by the way : They resolv'd to treat
 him as a Person of Eminent Quality, hav-
 ing understood by his Servant, that he
 was really such, and that upon his Reco-
 very

very out of a great Sickness, that Madness had seiz'd him. The Lady *Eleanora* was very well content, leaving it to some other time to acquaint him therewith.

Don Pedro Blasco coming to take his leave of the Marquess, said to him, that since he was so unhappy as not to deserve his Fair Daughter's Hand in the Quality of a Husband, he would allow him to Love her with a Vertuous Love, such as even her Husband should not disapprove: The Marquess gave way, desiring him to honour him with his Company at Supper that Night, by reason he had somewhat to Communicate unto him. *Don Philip* gladly accepted the Proffer, and thereupon they parted.

The Marquess and his Company talked very much of *Don Pedro*, wondring at the strange kind of Madness he was fallen into. He acquainted them with the Design he had to take him along with him to the Court. The Master of the House where he was Lodg'd happening to be then present, told him, that he doubted, *Don Pedro Blasco* would hardly be perswaded thereto, if the Marquess treated him as an inferiour: For he was mighty Self conceited, and stood much upon his Honour; but if he were willing, there would arise
another

another Difficulty in the manner of his Travelling: In regard, (said he to him) your Excellency going by Litter, I think he would be loath to go by Horse: " We'll
 " find an Expedient for that, (says the
 " Marquess) which is that my Daughter,
 " as his Mistress, shall command him to
 " entertain her at the side of her Litter;
 " for if his Love continues, he will be glad
 " of the Opportunity, and he shall have
 " an excellent Horse richly Harness'd,
 " which I have led after me, to ride
 " on when I am weary of the Lit-
 " ter.

Don Philip, who had been acquainted with all these Discourses, fail'd not to come to Supper, to which he had been Invited. The Marquess receiv'd him very civilly, and caus'd a Chair to be set for him, near his Daughter, which he thought a very signal Favour. They talk'd of divers things. The Marquess finding he had an excellent Wit in his Intervals, which he ever clos'd with some pleasant Extravagance. They were very Merry at Supper, and were oblig'd for their Diversion, to the Merry Discourses of *Don Philip*. At last, the Cloth being taken away, the Marquess broke his Mind to him in these Words.

" 'Tis

"'Tis a thousand Pities, most Renown-
 ed Knight, that a Person so Accom-
 plish'd as you are, and one furnish'd
 with all the Excellent Endowments that
 recommend Men to the Favour and E-
 steem of Princes, should as it were defie
 their Courts, and spend your Time and
 Talents in such an obscure Place as this
 is. I have heard that the reason of this
 your Retirement is, that you have not
 means to live suitably to your Condi-
 tion, and the Rank you should main-
 tain. If it be so, give me leave to
 propose an Expedient to you, out of
 the particular Esteem I have for your
Seignory. I shall take it for a very great
 Favour if you will be pleas'd to go a-
 long with me to *Villadolid*, where you
 shall be treated, in my Quarters, with
 all the Submissions and Respects due to
 a Person of your Quality, yet so as that
 it shall not cost you any thing. By
 this means coming to be known, and
 your Worth spreading it self, you may
 meet with a rich Wife, of some Illu-
 strious Family; wherein my Daughter
 may do you a Kindness, in regard she
 having occasion to see many of them,
 will advance you into her Favour, for
 whom you have most Inclination: Let
 me

“ me obtain of your Knighthood, the
 “ Favour I Desire of you : Live freely
 “ with us : Since you would have me be-
 “ lieve, that the Love you bear my
 “ Daughter is pure and sincere ; I will un-
 “ dertake it shall be kindly taken by the
 “ Husband she hopes to have : I expect
 “ your Answer to this Particular, and I
 “ Desire it may be Consonant to the E-
 “ steem I have for your Worth.

Don Philip was extremely satisfied, that
 the Imposture had taken so well, and im-
 mediately apprehended, That living in
 the House with the Marquess, he should
 be near her whom he Ador'd ; which was
 the main end of his Desires. Whereupon
 he return'd him this Answer. “ No
 “ Temptation in the World should have
 “ forc'd my Removal from this Place, but
 “ the extraordinary Civilities I have re-
 “ ceiv'd from your Excellency. I had re-
 “ solv'd to spend the rest of my Days in
 “ this Retirement, as conceiving it the
 “ best Course for a Person of my Quality,
 “ whose Revenues are much below his Ho-
 “ nour ; to confine himself to some Place,
 “ where he is not much known, and so
 “ avoid the charge of Servants and Cloths.
 “ But the Respects you are pleas'd to have
 “ for me, together with this Transcen-
 “ dent

“ dent Beauty, who by the forcible At-
 “ tractions of her Divine Countenance,
 “ draws Hearts after her, as the *Thracian*
 “ *Orpheus* did living Creatures, Stones
 “ and Plants, by the Harmonious Sound
 “ of his Harp, have made me wholly at
 “ your Service. I shall not trouble either
 “ you or my self to tell you how Persons
 “ of my Quality ought to be treated ; as
 “ thinking it enough, that I have already
 “ acquainted you with my Titles, and
 “ particularly that I am of the Blood
 “ Royal. The greatest Favour you can
 “ ever do me, is, that you command me
 “ to wait on your Daughter on the road,
 “ which if you do, I shall the more wil-
 “ lingly accept of the Proffer you are
 “ pleas'd to make me. The Marquess
 finding him willing to go along with them,
 all that remain'd to be done, was to pre-
 swade him to do it on Horse-back, which
 he was content to do, that he might the
 better entertain his Mistress at the side of
 the Litter. *Don Philip* help'd the Lady
 into her Litter, being Proud in his Mind
 at that Introduction of his Service to her,
 and that he had the Happiness to take her
 by the fair Hand ; continuing his Attend-
 ence on her from their Departure from
Pont-ferrada, till they came to *Villadolid*. All
 the

the way long, he entertain'd her with pleasant Discourses, intermixt with Amorous Expressions, and at every Inn they came to, she fail'd not to give her Father and Account of the diverting Discourses she had with *Don Philip*.

The last Day of their Journey, *Don Philip* would needs feel the Pulse of his Mistress as to her intended Marriage, and endeavour'd to discover how she was inclin'd thereto. He brought the Discourse about so dextrously, that she might not suspect him guilty of any impertinent Curiosity. It is commonly observ'd that Persons any way afflicted are apt to break their Minds to any People, but especially to those with whom they are Familiarly acquainted. Accordingly, to ease her own Thoughts, and satisfy *Don Philip*, she made him this Answer.

“ Worthy Knight of the most Honour-
 “ able Order of *Prim-roses*, I must needs
 “ acknowledge, that my Cousin *Henrick*
 “ is a Person endow'd with all the Quali-
 “ ties, capable to raise a Woman's Love
 “ to the highest Pitch ; but I have withal
 “ discovered him to be so fickle, and one
 “ so naturally inclined to address himself
 “ to all sorts of Women, not regarding
 “ whether they be nobly or meanly de-
 “ scended,

" scended, that it very much cools my
 " Affection towards him, and makes me
 " fear his Alliance; though I find my self
 " sufficiently inclin'd thereto, could I
 " perceive any likelihood of his reforming
 " himself of that insufferable Humour:
 " But far from that, since my coming into
 " *Spain*, when he should have endeavour'd
 " to give me greater assurance of his
 " Affection, I find him as indifferent as
 " to my Satisfaction as ever; And Hea-
 " ven knows with what apprehensions I
 " am induc'd to condescend to this Match;
 " for if I am now frightn'd at the thoughts
 " of his Miscarriages, what must I not
 " fear, when he obtains the Superiority?
 " The Obedience I owe my Father, and
 " the necessity I find that this Marriage
 " should be concluded, for the Composure
 " of some Differences in our Family, make
 " me wholly passive in the Business, and
 " so content it should go forward. I ad-
 " mit of his Addresses not without some
 " violence to my Inclination, and all I
 " can do, is to pray Heaven, that it
 " would inspire him with better Resolu-
 " tions.

Don Philip could have wish'd that she had
 not been so resolute, as she seem'd to be.
 He therefore, though then personating a

M

Fool

Fool answer'd her as a Wise man, and advis'd her to bear a while with the Failings of her Cousin. " Despair not Madam, (said he to her) but *Don Henrick* may become another Man, and that if he be such as you describe him now, that volatile Humour will be fix'd in him, when he comes to be possess'd of so fair and accomplish'd a Lady. But he resolv'd upon the first Opportunity should present it self, to express his Mind to her in other Terms; and to make a full Discovery of himself to his Mistress.

They came that Day to *Villadolid*, and *Henrick* met them half a Day's Journey short of it: He was very kindly receiv'd, both of the Marquess and his Daughter, whereat the disguised *Don Philip* was not a little troubled; for finding *Don Henrick* a very graceful Person, he began to entertain some doubts of the Success of his Enterprize. The Marquess thought to make him acquainted with *Don Philip*, that by the Character he gave him, he might accordingly treat him. " Nephew, (said he to him) I pray take notice of this Noble Cavalier, who has Honour'd us with his Company from *Galicie*; for his Person, and the rare Qualities he is

" Master

“ Master of, are such as deserve the highest
 “ Esteem. I desire you to respect him
 “ accordingly, and assure your self all you
 “ do will be below his Merit, not only
 “ upon the Account of the Royal Blood
 “ from which he is descended, but also
 “ the Romantick Title he assumes to him-
 “ self, of *Knight of the Honourable Order of*
 “ *Prim-roses* : He pretends a Jurisdiction
 “ over all those Places where-ever any of
 “ that Flower grows, and never sees it,
 “ but he thinks of the Complexion of a
 “ Mistress he once had, who spent most
 “ of her time in Gardens, in one where-
 “ of it was Love’s Pleasure to make him
 “ a Captive to her Beauty, as she was ga-
 “ thering some Prim-roses.

This Description made *Don Henrick* take
 a particular notice of *Don Philip*, and he
 doubted not as well by his Accoutrements,
 as by the Fantastick Title he had taken to
 himself, to conclude him a most Tran-
 scendent Extravagant, and that as such,
 they had entertain’d him into their Com-
 pany. Accordingly, to comply with his
 Uncle, he made this Compliment to *Don*
Philip, “ Most Honourable Knight of the
 “ Order of *Prim-roses*, I shall receive your
 “ Acquaintance with as great Satisfaction
 “ as I should do that of the greatest Mo-

“ narch in the World, and think my self
 “ infinitely oblig’d to you, that being a
 “ Person of such extraordinary Parts, you
 “ were pleas’d to honour the Marquess
 “ my Uncle, and my Cousin, with your
 “ Company so far out of your own Ter-
 “ ritories. In acknowledgement of that
 “ Noble Favour, be pleas’d to accept the
 “ Proffer I make to you of ever being
 “ your most affectionate and most humble
 “ Servant, than which I cannot expect a
 “ a higher Relation to you, when I consi-
 “ der the Character my Uncle has been
 “ pleas’d to give you.

Don Philip return’d him most humble
 thanks, and said to him, “ I have so high
 “ an Esteem for whatsoever this fair Lady
 “ is concern’d in, that I shall make it my
 “ Business to Sacrifice all you think most
 “ Excellent in me to her Satisfaction and
 “ yours, as long as it shall please his Ex-
 “ cellency to give me leave to be of his
 “ Retinue. “ How (replies *Henrick*) may
 “ we expect that farther Happiness as to
 “ enjoy your Company for some time?
 “ I see no reason you have to be so glad of
 “ it, (replies the Marquess) for you must
 “ know, that *Don Pedro Blasco* is fallen
 “ deeply in Love with your Cousin, and
 “ that it is his Affection has occasion’d
 “ this

“ this Acquaintance ; though he has as-
 “ sur’d me, that since he understood she
 “ was design’d for you, that Love is turn’d
 “ into a pure fraternal Friendship, and
 “ under that Innocent Passion he endea-
 “ vours to oblige her what lies in his
 “ Power. Be pleas’d to take my further
 “ Assurance of it, (says *Don Philip*) that
 “ no Thought of that may break your
 “ Rest ; for that Consideration laid aside,
 “ I should think my self capable to raise a
 “ Jealousy even in *Narcissus* himself, were
 “ he now alive : For I dare without any
 “ Vanity, affirm it, That there is not a
 “ Person in the World may be compar’d
 “ to me, either as to Gracefulness of Bo-
 “ dy or Accomplishments of Mind. “ I
 “ am sufficiently convinced of the Truth
 “ of what you say, (says *Henrick*) though
 “ I have not known you long : And there-
 “ fore wholly relying on the Promise you
 “ make me, I shall fear nothing as to your
 “ Pretensions, which were they any o-
 “ ther Person’s I should not be guilty of
 “ so great an Indifferency. With these
 Discourses, they got to the Court, and
 the Ambassador being alighted at his House,
 he there found many Ladies, impatiently
 expecting the Arrival of the fair Lady
Eleanora, who was receiv’d out of her Lit-

ter into the Arms of her design'd Husband, whereat *Don Philip* could do no less than conceive a little Jealousy. *Henrick*, to begin the Demonstrations of his Love, had prepared a Magnificent Supper, to which were invited all those, of both Sexes, who were come thither to receive the Ambassador and his Daughter. *Don Philip* went to Bed presently after Supper, extremely troubled in mind, that he had engag'd himself in an Enterprize, wherein he found so great Difficulties. He could not imagine any means to bring it about, so as that he might come off with Credit: He met with too many Obstacles, and what afflicted him most of all, was the Resolution the Lady had taken to satisfy her Father's Will, who was desirous the Marriage should be concluded with *Henrick*, though he had been acquainted, as well as she, with his Miscarriages. *Marco* could not forbear grumbling at the Resolution of his Master, which should have ended amidst those Difficulties. He expos'd himself as an Extravagant Person in a Court where he might have rais'd himself into Esteem, and out of a hope not likely to be brought to any Effect, he ran himself daily into new Inconveniences. The Master and Servant spent some part of

of the Night in discoursing about the Business, till at last *Don Philip* fell asleep, with a Resolution to discover himself to his Mistress, and if his Addresses were not well entertain'd by her, to return immediately into *Galicia*.

The Visits of the Cavaliers and Ladies, continu'd six Days, during which time the Marquess and his Daughter were often seen, both of them taking much Pleasure in the pleasant Demeanour of *Don Philip*, who acted the Part he had undertaken so admirably well, that his Extravagances became the Discourse of the whole Court; all speaking of him as one of the most Humorous Fools that had come upon the Stage of a long time: Insomuch that some advised the Ambassadour to bring him to the Palace, assuring him the King would be much pleas'd with his Behaviour. *Don Philip* coming to hear of it, seem'd to be very angry and excused himself, out of a fear his Majesty might not entertain him, suitably to his Quality and Extraction; that he would not run the hazard of receiving an Affront, and that the least Disrespect shewn him would force him to violent Resentments thereof. The Ambassadour press'd him no further lest he might put him out of Humour, perceiving

he lik'd not the Proposal, and put it off to some other time, when perhaps he might find him more inclin'd to Compliance.

Henrick, who was lodg'd in the Ambassador's House, had only two Servants to wait on him, whom he trusted with the Knowledge of all his Love-Adventures. It happened that both these fell Sick at the same time, a time when he should have shewn more Reservedness in his Amours, to raise himself into a better Esteem with his Mistress: But he on the contrary, minded his own Enjoyments above all things, and never considering the present posture of his Affairs, he continu'd his Night Visits, as he was wont to do before her Arrival. Being thus disappointed of their Attendance, who were best acquainted with his Humours, he conceiv'd he could not pitch upon a fitter Person to accompany him than *Marco*, who with the leave of his Master *Don Philip*, went along with him: Finding him a subtil Fellow and experienc'd in such Affairs, he thought him a Person fit for his Purpose, and accordingly that he might trust him with any thing. He took him along with him three or four Nights together to a certain House, out of which he came at a
very

very unseasonable Hour. Though *Marco* went in with him, yet durst he not be so impertinently inquisitive, as to ask who was the Mistress of the House, till the third or fourth Night that he had accompanied him thither; and then being alone with the Servant-maid (who taking Example by her Mistress began to express some Kindness towards *Marco*) he ask'd her whose House that was, and to whom *Henrick* made his Visits.

Love and Secrecy are seldom found in the same Lodging. She was a Servant, and in Love with *Marco*; there needs no more to be said, to make it appear, that she satisfied him in whatever he desir'd to know. *Marco* understood from her, that, that House belong'd to his Master *Don Philip's* Aunt, and that his own Sister was the Person whom *Henrick* had at Rack and Manger, upon a Promise of Marriage, she had gotten from him a little before, under his Hand; she by reason of her Retiredness, being Innocently Ignorant of the Treaty of Marriage between him and his Cousin the Lady *Eleanora*.

Marco having pump'd out all these Particulars, fail'd not to give his Master an Account thereof the next Day. *Don Philip* was extremely surpriz'd thereat;

not without Indignation against his Sister, though that Procedure of *Henrick* rais'd him into some hopes of effecting his Design; presuming the more upon it, in that being equal, as to Birth, to *Henrick*, he was resolv'd he should never Marry any other, than her whom he had so highly dishonour'd. He therefore commanded *Marco* to acquaint the Maid who had made those Discoveries to him, that the Marriage of *Henrick* and his Cousin was agreed upon, and that a Messenger was sent to *Rome* for the Dispensation, not forgetting the rare Accomplishments of the Lady *Eleanora*; to the end she might acquaint his Sister therewith, to see what Course she would take, and how she would Remedy the Affront intended her.

He punctually executed the Orders he had receiv'd. from *Don Philip*, so that the Night following *Donna Cornelia* (so was *Don Philip's* Sister call'd) was acquainted with the whole Business. She thereupon had a great Contestation with *Don Henrick*, who impudently deny'd that he had any thing to do, as to Marriage, with his Cousin. In fine, having done all he could to vindicate himself, and appease *Donna Cornelia*, she pretended to be satisfied with him, provided he more fully justifi'd his Innocence.

Innocence the next Morning. So she dismiss'd *Henrick*, who went away well satisfied, imagining her to be so too: But resolving with himself not to give her any Visit a while, he pretended some Indisposition. *Don Philip* understood that Night from *Marco* all that had passed between *Don Henrick* and his Sister, and was extremely incens'd against her, that she had given Credit to the deceitful Words of a Perfidious Man. However, he thought fit to let pass two Days, to see what Course his Sister would take in that time, commanding *Marco* to prosecute his Discoveries.

The next Day, *Don Henrick* not coming to clear himself, as he had promis'd, *Donna Cornelia* was so enrag'd, that she would stay no longer, but resolv'd to be satisfied from the Mouth of the Ambassadour, of the Affront intended to be done her. She took a Coach, and veiling her Face, came to his House, but at such an unfortunate time, that she met *Don Henrick* at the Door, who discovering who she was, presently imagin'd what might Occasion that Visit, and that her coming thither was to acquaint the Ambassadour how he was engag'd to her, and to shew him that Promise of Marriage. *Don Henrick* receiv'd
her

her with extraordinary Kindness, which she taking otherwise than he expected, added the more to his Suspicion. He told her, he had something particular to acquaint her with, and entreated her to go along with him to a Room at some distance from his Uncle's Lodgings. *Donna Cornelip* would not be perswaded a good while to give him that Satisfaction, telling him, that she must first speak with the Ambassadour, and that afterwards he should talk with her as long as he pleas'd. That *Don Henrick* endeavour'd to prevent, assuring her, that he was at that time, very busie, looking over a packet of Letters he had receiv'd from the Emperour. He was so importunate with her, that she would hear him before she spoke with the Ambassadour, that at last he prevail'd. Whereupon conducting her to *Don Philip's* Chamber, he entreated him to bear her Company, till he came back to speak with her.

Cornelia having her Face veil'd all this time, *Don Philip* knew her not, but by the Discoveries he had receiv'd, he suspected her to be his Sister : On the other side, he was so transform'd by the Extravagance of his Cloths, and what added much to his Disguise, his perpetual wearing of *Spectacles*,
that

that she could not have the least imagination of his being her Brother. *Don Philip* kept her Company a while, without enquiring into the Occasion of her coming thither, and at last, leaving her lock'd up in the Room, he went to look for *Don Henrick*, to know how he would have him dispose of her. He was then busie with his Uncle, but sent one to desire *Don Philip*, to entertain that Lady a while, with this Excuse, that as soon as he could, he would come and dispatch her. *Don Philip* returning to his Chamber, immediately lock'd the Door.

In the mean time the Lady *Eleanora* had understood, that her Cousin had spoken to a Woman with her Face Veil'd in one of the Walks leading to the Ambassador's House, and desir'd *Don Philip* to Conduct her to his Chamber. The Jealousy she conceiv'd thereat rais'd in her a Desire to know who she might be, which she might easily discover, by reason there was a Passage from her Lodgings to *Don Philip's* Chamber, and at the end of it a Door, whereof she had the Key: She open'd it very softly, lest she might be perceiv'd, and that just as *Don Philip*, coming into the Room, found his Sister with her Face Unveil'd, expecting to be seen only

only by *Don Henrick*, whom only she staid for: As soon as he had taken a slight View of her, he apply'd this Discourse to her. *Ungracious and Unhappy Woman, unworthy of the House out of which thou art descended, and that I should call thee my Sister! Is it possible thou shouldest be Guilty of so strange an Oblivion of thy self, as relying on the vain Promises of a treacherous Person to come into this House to seek him who has abus'd thee, and to whom thou hast impudently prostituted thy self? Comest thou to importune a Man that has forgotten thee, and to Court him who has so palpably deceiv'd thee? If, besotted with a fond Love, it be thy Design to be Married to him, thou hast Friends to whom thou mightest have Communicated thy Desires, rather than have abandon'd thy self to a Man who treats thee with so much Contempt; and notwithstanding all his Caresses, laughs at thee in his Sleeve. He is upon the Point of Marriage with his Cousin; art thou so Simple, as that thou only should'st be Ignorant of what is known all over the Court? Had I not a respect for the Place where thou art, this Sword should dispatch thy Criminal Soul into the other World, that thou might'st be an Example to all such simple Fools as thou art: Hast thou so far forgotten the Respect due to thy Aunt, as to profane her House, by assigning Henrick his*

his Nocturnal Meetings in it ? Thou should'st have bethought thy self who thou art, that he is of no better a House than thy self, and that thy Quality is as high as his. 'Tis a great happiness to thee, that an Humour took me to come into this Court, though thou seest me in this ridiculous Habit, to prevent, what lies in my power, Henrick's further Abuse of thee ; which I will do with the hazard of my Life : Tell me, infamous Woman, what has pass'd between you, that I may take some Course therein, and dissemble not the Truth in any thing ; for it concerns thee no less than Honour and Life.

The Disconsolate Donna Cornelia heard this Discourse with her Eyes fastned on the Ground and flowing with Tears, without giving him the least Interruption. But at last, to obey her Brother, whose Indignation she saw justly grounded, she told him in few Words, how Henrick had seen her at a certain Publick Meeting, that he lik'd her, and having enquir'd out her Lodgings, he had sent her several Letters ; that having continu'd his Addresses to her with great demonstrations of Affection, she had granted him entrance into the House, and that upon a Promise of Marriage under his Hand, (which she had about her) she had permitted him to dispose

pose of her as he pleas'd. In fine she gave him a particular Account of all that happen'd between them; whereupon he, to add no more to her Affliction, put her in some hope, that *Henrick* should be forc'd to perform the Promise he had made to her.

The fair Lady *Eleanora* had heard all this Discourse at the Door, which was between her Lodgings and *Don Philip's* Chamber; extremely astonished how a Person of Quality (such as she found *Don Philip* to be by his Discourse) and one of such an excellent Wit, could put on a Fool's Coat, and behave himself as an Extravagant in their House, and all about the Court. She was Ignorant of the Cause of that strange *Metamorphosis*, and yet she had a certain Suspicion, that it might be upon her Account. On the other side, she reflected on the double Treachery of her Cousin *Don Henrick*, in treating of a Marriage with her, having given a Promise of the same thing to another, and to a Person so highly qualify'd as *Donna Cornelia* seem'd to be.

Being fully satisfy'd as to those two things, she would not stand to hear them any longer, but rush'd into the Room so of a sudden, as that she had not the time
to

to put any thing over her Face, nor he to dissemble his Indignation. Seeing her coming towards them, *Ab Madam*, (said he to her) *What mean these Ambushes? What's your Design therein, Sovereign Princess of my Soul, and absolute Directress of my Inclinations? Do you use such a Treachery against those who could not so much as imagine you guilty of any such thing? I wish so great a Beauty would not give me any more such Apprehensions, for another Surprise of this Nature would make me die out of pure Joy, as it has been the Fortunes of others to die out of an excess of Grief.*

There is no Dissembling any longer, (replies the Lady) for I am fully assur'd that you are not the Person you seem to us to be, and that the Affliction you are in, requires rather secret and real Resentments, than personated Extravagances. My Curiosity beightened by a little Jealousy, procured me the Discovery of more than you imagine: I have found the Perfidiousness of my Cousin Don Henrick greater towards me than I could have expected; considering his pretended Kindnesses. I would fain be deliver'd out of the Confusion I am in, and I earnestly entreat you to resolve me this Riddle; for its Obscurity perplexes me very much: But before you take that Trouble upon you, give me leave to carry this Lady
your

your Sister to my Lodgings, and if my Cousin comes in the mean time to enquire after her, you may tell him, that she went away much displeased at his long Stay, and leave the rest to me.

Having so said, she took *Donna Cornelia* along with her, assuring her she would do all that lay in her Power to serve her, which put her in hope of a better Success in her Affairs, than she could have deriv'd from either her Brother's Indignation, or *Henrick's* Treachery. The Lady *Eleanora* left *Donna Cornelia* among her Women, and returns to *Don Philip*; who though at first surpriz'd at the Sight of her, and the thought of her having over-heard the Infamy of his Sister; yet was he withal glad of it, since her Jealousy and Curiosity had discovered his Transformation, and the unhandsome Carriage of her Cousin. *Don Philip* therefore was very glad to see his Mistress return'd, as might be seen by the Chearfulness of his Countenance. She desired him to take a Chair, and doing the like her self, she open'd her Mind to him in these Words.

I have been in an extraordinary Confusion for some Days past, and so incensed against my Cousin Don Henrick, to see the strangeness of his Behaviour towards me, that I come
to

to receive your Advice how far I ought to resent it, and withal to be satisfied in some things, whereof I must yet Acknowledge my self Ignorant. One is, and that much raises my wonder, to see you counterfeiting the Fool and Extravagant, in a Court, where you might rather act the Part of a Person of Honour and Gallantry; as having the advantage of being Brother to so fair a Lady as Donna Cornelia, who besides the Recommendation of Beauty, seems to be Mistress of many other good Qualities. You may infer from my Discourse, that being of the Quality I suppose you to be, you dishonour your self in representing the Natural and Ridiculous Person, as well in regard of the Habit you have assum'd, as the Extravagant Actions wherewith you amuse the World. Which since I cannot imagine you would do but that there must be some Mystery in it, I am the more desirous to know your Motives thereto, in that I conceive it will be a means to clear my Mind of certain Doubts which now lie somewhat heavy upon it. Having delivered this with the best Grace in the World, the fair Lady was silent, and left Don Philip the Liberty to make this reply, If you find me at any loss, Madam, in satisfying your Desires as to this particular, I question not but you will have the goodness to attribute it, to that Distraction poor Mortals are

are subject to, when they Address themselves to the Objects of their Vows and Adorations. You cannot be Ignorant, (though you knew it not by Experience) that Love is a powerful Divinity, to whom Men Sacrifice all things ; no Intrigues but he is Author of ; no Difficulties but he overcomes, to compass his Designs. This premised, I am in the next place freely to acknowledge that the Day you pass'd through Villa-franca, which is the Place of my Birth, I found my self Wounded by the Lightning of your fair Eyes. I did all that lay in my Power to oppose that Passion ; but it still prov'd predominant, and the Engagement I knew there was between you and your Cousin Don Henrick could not abate one tittle of it. Nay, though I knew all the particulars of that Engagement, wherein you rather comply'd with the Commands of a Father than your own Inclinations, inasmuch as you look'd on that too happy Kinsman as a fickle Person, unworthy your Affection, a Truth I have since heard confirmed by your self ; nay though I saw the Marriage in a manner concluded, yet all could not break the Resolution I had taken to disguise my self as you have seen to traverse it, and Fortune now seems to Favour my Design.

I am not therefore Madam, to repent me of the Slur I may have put upon my Blood, and the Noble House from which I am descended,

scended, in acting the Fool's Part in your's,
 into which it was my Business to introduce my
 self by all means imaginable; since the Im-
 posture has prov'd so fortunate, and that I
 begin to conceive some hopes of attaining my
 Desires. You know Madam, that I durst not
 have presum'd to make you a real Discovery of
 my self, for besides that I should run the hazard
 of not finding Credit with you, I came in at
 a time when your Marriage was in too great
 forwardness to be easily crossed by after Appli-
 cations. In fine, it was Heaven's Pleasure,
 that a strange Conjunction of my Sister's Mis-
 fortune, and your own just Jealousies, should
 give you a Discovery of what, perhaps I should
 yet a while have kept from your Knowledge.
 My true Name is Don Philip de Gamboa
 and Toledo, and consequently I may affirm
 my self to be of the most eminent Families of
 Spain; since I am descended from the Seignors
 of Villa-franca and Astorga. I have the Ho-
 nour to be Knight of the Order of Alcantara,
 and I have acquired it by some years Services
 done his Majesty in Flanders, with hopes e're
 long, to be gratified with an Advantageous
 Commandry. I have given you an Account
 of my Quality, and have not concealed from
 you my Presumption. All I have now to Apo-
 logize for, is my Love; and I am the more
 confident of your Pardon as to that, if you but
 ever

ever so little consider the unavoidable Influence of your own Attractions. Nay, I cannot but account it a happy Offence, since it has prov'd the occasion of your being undeceiv'd; and when I make a joint reflection on my own Happiness and my Sister's Credulity, I cannot repent me of a Disguise, whereof the Satisfaction infinitely exceeds the Shame: For it is in your Power to restore me the Honour I have depriv'd my self of, only for your sake; and I shall force him, who has cajoll'd my Sister out of her Honour, to perform the Promise he has made her, or it shall cost him his Life.

The fair Lady was so ravish'd to hear these Words from her disguised Lover, that she thought her self oblig'd to make an extraordinary Return to so extraordinary a demonstration of Affection: And being now fully undeceiv'd as to the Baseness of her Cousin Don Henrick, she made him this Answer. Seignior Don Philip, that you have upon so slight a ground, as the little Beauty I can pretend to, engaged your self in an Enterprize so prejudicial to your Reputation and Descent, I cannot but look on, as a transcendent Expression of your Love; though I do not excuse you as to this, that the Noble Accomplishments you are Master of, might no doubt have more happily and more worthily been otherwise employ'd. I have re-
sented

sented as I ought, the little Respect my Cousin has express'd towards me, and therefore it is but just he should not enjoy me; since it may be inferr'd from the forwardness of his matching with another, that he never truly intended it. It must needs be an extraordinary Joy to me, that I am undeceiv'd, before we were joyn'd by that Tye which only Death can dissolve: I am satisfyed as to the little Affection he had for me, and I do yours but Justice, when I assure you, that I shall be so far from forgetting it, that I shall endeavour all that lies in my Power to requite it.

This was deliver'd with so obliging an Accent, that the Amorous Cavalier would have cast himself at her Feet, would she have permitted it. He return'd her his Thanks with a thousand Submissions for so extraordinary a Favour, and the sweet encouragement she was pleas'd to give his Love. It was not now a seasonable time to expatiate into Compliments; *Donna Cornelia* was left in the Lady *Eleanora's* Lodgings, whose Return she expected, and *Don Philip* look'd for *Don Henrick* to enquire after the Lady he had recommended to his Custody. The Lady *Eleanora* went to comfort her whom she had left among her Women, and to put in Execution, what had been resolv'd,
between

between her and *Don Philip*. About half an Hour after her departure thence, comes *Don Henrick* to his Chamber, to look after the Lady he had left there: *Don Philip* told him, that he could stay her no longer, and that she was gone; thinking he would not have come to her again: *Nay then, I am glad I staid so long, (says Henrick) since my Stay has occasion'd her to do as I would have had her, which was that she might be gone out of the House. This Woman plagues me extremely, and it was no small Happinefs to me, that she met not with my Uncle; for I should have been much troubled had she had any Discourse with him.*

Don Philip ask'd him some odd Questions, as he was wont to do, to sift something further out of him; but *Don Henrick* would discover no more. The other easily apprehended, by the little had fallen from him, what Course he intended to take, and the Indignation he conceiv'd at this slighting of his Sister was so great, that it was not without much violence done him himself, he forbore calling him to Account for it. In the mean time the Lady *Eleanora* had visited *Donna Cornelia*, of whom she had receiv'd a punctual Relation of her Amours, which were but too

too much confirm'd to her by the Promise of Marriage she had brought with her ; and after she had entred into a second Admiration at the double Perfidiousness of her Cousin *Don Henrick*, she sent to desire her Father to come to her, who being alone with her, she entertain'd him with this following Discourse.

Sir, it has ever been a laudable Custom that Fathers should dispose of their Daughters in Marriage, as they either pleas'd themselves, or found most convenient for their Affairs ; but with this Caution, That it should not be absolutely done contrary to their Wills and Inclinations. Many are yet willing to do so, out of a presumption, that Matrimony will change Men's Humours ; but it is seldom found to work that Effect : Those therefore may be said to do well, who referring the Success to the higher Powers, by an implicate Obedience, comply with the disposal of their Parents ; but those in my Judgment do better, who use some Precaution, and endeavour to prevent the Inconveniencies, which they must otherwise fall into. I have been ready, Sir, to do whatever you command me, especially in the Business now in agitation ; though I have found my Cousin Don Henrick to be of a Disposition so contrary to mine, that I promis'd my self little Satisfaction from our being joyn'd together in

N

the

the inseparable State you intended. I have endeavour'd to obey you, tho' with some Violence to my own Inclinations, which directed my Affection to other Persons not inferior to him, either in Quality or Estate. I consented to this Marriage because you seem'd so much to desire it. When it was fully Concluded, there was a Person sent to Rome for the Dispensation; and even during that time, when I expected my Cousin should have express'd most Love to me, I have found he has done quite contrary: for he has given a Promise of Marriage to another Lady whom you shall presently see.

She thereupon call'd for Donna Cornelia, whom she had left in her own Chamber, and who immediately came before the Ambassadour: Having dispos'd her into a Chair, the Lady Eleanora continu'd her Discourse; This, Sir, is the Lady I spoke of, to whom my Cousin has given a Promise of Marriage under his Hand, which she now has about her, and you shall see, how this perfidious Person became thereby Master of her Honour. Coming hither to speak with you, and to complain of the Affront intended her; she met him, who giving her fair Words, lock'd her into Don Philip's Chamber, under pretence that you were busy, and that it would require some time to stay e're she could see you. Some little
Curiosity

Curiosity occasion'd my going to that Door, which is between my Lodgings and his, and there I came to the knowledge of this Business; having over-heard some part of their Discourse. I thought fit to bring this Lady to my Chamber, to give you further satisfaction of so pressing a Truth. Her Quality is great, since she is of the House of Gamboa and Toledo, two of the most Illustrious Families in Spain: She is resolv'd to make the Case known to her Friends, who are very Noble and of great Credit in this Court, that they may oppose my Marriage and prevent our common Affront. I have hitherto obey'd you as a Father, I now appeal to you as my Judge, and I beseech you discharge me of so unjust an Obedience for the future; for I am resolv'd rather to confine my self the remainder of my Days, in the most Austere Monastery about this City, than ever be Wife to a Man so insensible of Worth and Honour.

The Ambassadour was extremely astonish'd both, at what he saw, and what he had heard. He examin'd the Promise made to Donna Cornelia, and found that that Discovery alone was sufficient to prevent his Daughter's Marriage with Henrick. He immediately resolv'd to break all to pieces, and to dismiss his Nephew, that there might be no more talk of

the Business: He caus'd the Ladies to withdraw, and sent for his Nephew, to whom he shew'd the Schedule he had made to *Donna Cornelia*; asking him whether he knew the Hand. He not a little troubled, and changing Colour, began to deny it; but the Ambassadour told him, that as he could not do it sincerely, so it would be very unhandfomly proffer'd, since the Truth would be prov'd by several of his Letters written in the same Hand. At last *Don Henrick*, not without extreme Confusion, acknowledg'd that blinded by Love, he had indeed made that Promise, but he would lose his Life e're he perform'd it.

Don Philip having quitted his Fool's Coat, and put on a very rich Suit, with the Cross of *Alcantara* on his Coat, and Cloak, heard this Discourse from a corner of the Room, where he was dispos'd, and not able to contain himself any longer; *Seignior Henrick*, (said he coming up to him) *have a better care what you say, and consider her Quality whom you injure; her Birth is at least as Noble as yours: She is my Sister, and as such, I am oblig'd to vindicate and protect her. If you perform not the Promise you have made her, I wear a Sword by my side, which shall force you to do it, if Ho-*

now will not. *I have already consider'd what I am in Duty oblig'd to, as to that Point,* (replies *Don Henrick*) *and no Man shall force me, by Menaces, to do any thing against my Will:* This so enrag'd *Don Philip*, that he gave *Don Henrick* a Challenge. The Dispute grew higher and higher, which oblig'd the Ladies to come in between them, and to give Orders the Doors should be shut, lest they should put the Challenge in Execution.

While these things pass'd, the Ambassador minded not the Person of *Don Philip*, but imagin'd him some other Person come thither after his Sister; for seeing him so well habited with the Cross of *Alcantara* and without Spectacles, (which he constantly wore) he knew him not: But having consider'd him better, he found that he who Challenged his Nephew was the same Person who by his pleasant Extravagances, had found him so much Sport. The Lady *Eleanora* perceiving her Father had his Eyes fasten'd on him, with some Astonishment, imagin'd the Cause of it; and gave it a check in these Words, *He Sir, whom you see in a Habit so different, from that he was wont to wear, and who seem'd so ridiculous to you, is Don Philip de Gamboa and Toledo: When this Dispute is over you*
N 3 *shall*

shall know the Motives oblig'd him to that Disguise.

The Ambassadour was more astonished at that, and would have press'd his Daughter to make a further discovery of that Secret, had he not seen the two Cavaliers with Swords drawn, ready to make that Room the Place of their Duel: He ran in between them, and endeavour'd by Mildness to perswade his Nephew, not to contest in a Business, which was not to his Advantage; that if he satisfy'd not the injured Cavalier, Mischief would attend it; that he should not rely on any Protection he might hope for from him, inasmuch as seeing the little reason he had on his side, and the Affront he intended that Lady, he should rather be against him, by assisting his Adversary, than countenance him in so unjust a Cause: That as to his Daughter, he might quit all Hopes of her; that he should never be her Husband; and that it would discover a great poorness of Spirit in her, if she had any thought of Kindness for him after he had so unworthily treated her. *Don Henrick*, finding himself press'd with Reproaches on all sides, and withal hearkning to the Advice of his Conscience, thought it best to follow his Uncle's Counsel.

fel. He thereupon, went with open Arms to his true Wife, to whom he once more gave his Hand as a Husband, and then Embrac'd his Brother-in-Law, whom he yet knew not: The Lady *Eleanora* thought it a good Opportunity, before the whole Company, to give her Father an Account, how *Don Philip* had fallen in Love with her, how he got into his Retinue in the Quality of a Jester; that she conceiv'd her self oblig'd to requite the extraordinary demonstration of his Affection to her, by an Exchange of hers to him, if her Father approv'd of it. The old Gentleman had so much Gallantry left, as to admire the strange Conducts of Love in all its Operations; and particularly, how it made the wisest Men Mad, and the Mad Wise; making its Advantages of Extravagance it self, to compass its Design; without any further demurring, he gave his Consent. Whereupon the Lady *Eleanora* took him by the Hand, and *Don Philip* was so happy, as by odd and unlikely means to see all his Desires accomplished.

The Solemnities of both the Marriages were put off till eight Days after; all the Grandees about the Court came to them; the Balls thereat, and the Tiltings were

Extraordinary : But what more nearly touches the Story, is that the King Honour'd these two Cavaliers with great Advantages, wherewith *Don Philip* had also those of a numerous Issue ; for which *Don Henrick* needed not much to have envy'd him, being the most satisfy'd man in the World with his Choice whom he infinitely Lov'd, and thereby made it appear, That the Inclinations of two Persons, before they are united by Matrimony, though by some intervening Occurrences somewhat remitted, may yet, by that Sacred Tye, be heightned into a Noble and Vigorous Flame of perfect Love.

Garceran's Novel pleased all the Hearers, (*Garceran* was the Name of the Person that told it) and *Rufina* who over-heard it from her Chamber, was very much diverted by it. Brother *Crispin* confided mightily in her, and was not at all concerned at her hearing the Plots he laid with his Companions to perpetrate several Robberies in places where they had notice of Booty. *Crispin* approv'd of some of the Thefts that were propos'd, and disapproved of others upon account of the Inconveniences that must attend them: For he had acquired great Authority in the
the

the Gang. His great Experience had made him the North-point of that Honourable Society, and not one durst act contrary to his orders. It was now time to go to rest, which made them defer parting the new Theft till another time; so they put it into the Custody of the Hermit, who was always a very faithful Banker to them. His Comrades being retired, *Crispin* could not Sleep till he had been to see *Rufina* to wish her a good Night. He found her in a gayer Humour than he had yet seen her, which he was extremely glad of. He ask'd her what she thought of the Novel: She told him it was very diverting, and that if she was often to hear the like, it would soon carry off part of her Melancholy. Don't be uneasy, my Dear Lady (says the impudent Hypocrite) I hope you will here find the Grave of your Sorrows: We shall endeavour all we can to make the time seem short to you; and you may find your accounts in living among Us, if you are not too Scrupulous and will lay aside part of your Bashfulness. *Rufina* judged that it was time now to mix a spice of good Humour with her severe aspect, and to quit her pretended Grief: From that Night she began to shew the Hypocrite a smother Countenance, the

better to execute the design she had upon him. *Crispin* went to Bed, in great hopes that this Rock would now be quickly mollified, since he was got thro' the worst part of the Work, and had discovered himself to her for what he was, by pulling off the Mask of his false Piety.

At break of Day the Harpies left the Hermitage, to go seek their livelihood at the expence of those who did not distrust them. *Crispin* was to go to the Town, to ask Alms as usual. He went to take his leave of *Rufina*, who beg'd him to use his utmost endeavours to know if her Brother were at *Malaga*, giving him a description of his Person and Dress directly opposite to the Truth. He lock'd her in, at which *Rufina* was not very uneasie, for she had provided passe-par-touts and pick-locks in Order to execute her design upon the *Genevan*. She remained alone in the Hermitage, as it had been concerted between her and *Garay*, that as soon as ever he saw Brother *Crispin* at *Malaga*, he should immediately come to her; which he did, mounted upon one of the two Horses he had brought with him. *Rufina* hearing him at the door, soon opened it, and told him in few Words the Profession she found Brother *Crispin* to be of, the
 Passion

Passion he had declared for her, and that
 there was in the Hermitage a good sum
 of Money which had been got in the way
 of his Calling. *Rufina* was resolved to
 carry off all the coyned Money, and not
 to leave a single *Dubloon*. She bid *Garay*
 return that moment to the Town, and
 fetch her some Powders that might lay
Crispin into a profound Sleep when he
 came from his Begging; that it might
 not be possible to wake him all that
 Night. *Garay* gallop'd back to *Malaga*,
 and in a very little time brought the Pow-
 ders she wanted, before *Crispin* returned,
 for he was busied all day in gathering his
 Alms, and did not come to the Hermi-
 tage till the approach of Night. At his re-
 turn he was very much caressed by *Rufina*
 which put him into an ecstasy of Joy :
 For he was every moment more and more
 captivated. He shewed her what he had
 got that Day by Begging ; and besides
 what had been voluntarily given, he had
 cunningly filched some things of Value,
 and among the rest a Pearl Necklace, which
 he put round *Rufina's* Neck, with a thou-
 sand amorous Compliments. She mightily
 civilly thank'd him for the present, and
 they supp'd together very contentedly,
 he every moment putting her in mind
 of

of his Love, and she returning very favourable Answers, assuring him that she would shortly gratifie his Wishes.

It had been agreed among the Thieves that they should meet that very Night in the Hermitage, and hold a general Chapter of their Brotherhood; *Crispin* was very uneasy at it, because he was unwilling they should see *Rufina*: So soon as ever they came (for they were very Punctual) he invented a Trick to send them packing. He told them he had just been informed from Town, that there was a hue and cry after a Man that had treacherously murdered another, and that sacred Places themselves not being an Asylum for such Criminals, he fear'd search wou'd be made in his Hermitage; and so if by chance any one among them shou'd be known to have committed any other Crimes, he might be siezed and hurried to Prison. As the smallest matter is enough to frighten People of this Trade, they easily gave in to what their Captain told them, and crying the Devil take the hindmost deferr'd their General Meeting till four days afterwards. By this means our *Crispin* was left alone in the Hermitage with his Mistress, who had given him her Word to satisfy him that Night, and to grant him
the

the utmost he cou'd desire ; which raised him to such a pitch of Joy as it is impossible to express.

Supper was presently set upon the Table ; it was a very splendid one, *Crispin* having brought from the Town several sorts of Fowls and Game just ready to be clapt on the Spit, with a good bottle of the best Wine of *Malaga*, which is the finest in all *Spain*. They sat down with a great deal of Satisfaction and Gayety : The Glasse went about merrily, and *Rufina* who pushed it as much as decently she cou'd, took care that *Crispin* shou'd not drink one Glass without some of the sleeping Powders she had prepared for him. *Crispin* drank enough to do his business ; and the last Glass he swallow'd concluded the Supper, for he fell down fast asleep under the Table, with so great a heaviness upon him that *Rufina* to try how the Powder work'd, having pulled him by the Nose and Ears was convinced that it was as easie to wake a dead Body as it was to wake him. Secure of this she went down into the Cave, which was under-ground, and out of certain Coffers she found there, took all the Money she cou'd lay hands on, and which was in no small quantity. She put it into Bags which she ty'd with Whipcord,

cord, and into long leather Pockets, which the Rogues had stolen from a Rich Grazier that was travelling to *Madrid*. This done, *Rufina* went out, and by the sign agreed upon soon call'd *Garay* to her, for he waited thereabouts on purpose. She told him how matters stood.

They brought out all the coyned Gold and Silver, and left all the other things, tho' of considerable Value; for it was their maxim never to take any thing that might be known again. They had quickly loaded *Garay's* Nag with all the Money, and themselves mounting upon the other took the Road to *Malaga*, over-joyed with having outwitted and rifled the subtlest Thief in Europe, and with so much ease. They came to *Malaga*, and went directly to *Garay's* Inn, *Rufina* concealed herself from the other Guests all that Night and the following Day. She knew the time when the General Assembly of the Rogues was appointed to be held at the Hermitage, with *Crispin* their President, which was in about four days time. She ordered matters as you shall hear presently: For I must now return to *Crispin*, whom we left asleep. He had spent all that Night under the Table at which he had supt, and it being now broad Day, he

he awaked ignorant of what had happened in the Night. He called *Rufina* remembering that by this Drowsie Fit, he had miss'd the opportunity he had so much wished for, which made him extremely uneasie : He repeated his cunning Mistress's Name several times, but in vain. He sought her all over the House, in the Chapel, in the Cave ; not finding her there, he went out into the Fields to look her ; he found the Doors all fast, which amazed him, and inclined him to believe that some Accident had happened to her : He look'd for her over again, but perceiving the Coffers open and clear'd of the Money he had left in them, he soon found he was robb'd ; and began to fantasie that the poor Innocent had taken flight for fear of the Thieves, and hid herself in the Country somewhere thereabouts, not daring to Travel in the dark : He sought her as diligently as he cou'd, but she was a great way out of his reach. He was forc'd to take patience, ashamed and vexed that so famous and so experienced a Rogue as himself, shou'd be the Cully of a simple Woman ; for he began now to suspect that all she had said and done had been only to impose upon him. He went that very day to *Malaga*, to see if he cou'd find her

her in the Town. He met *Garay*; but having never seen him before, that was of no Service to him.

Rufina and *Garay* had already fixed upon their Departure to *Castile*, but she wou'd not leave *Malaga*, till she had done the Hypocrite *Crispin* an ill turn. She knew the day when the Thieves were all to meet in the Hermitage, which that Villain had made a Den of Thieves. That they might be caught all together, to receive the Punishment their Crimes deserved, she wrote a Letter to the Provost, informing him of the time and Place of their Assembling and how they might be taken: This done, *Garay* and *Rufina* set out for *Toledo*, in the Road to which we shall leave them to relate what the Provost did, as soon as ever he receiv'd *Rufina's* Letter. He stay'd till 'twas Night, and then going to the Hermitage with some *Archers*, he beset it, and went in. He found *Crispin*, little expecting such a Guest: He caused all the House to be searched, and afterwards the Cave, where his Companions were hid: There they saw the Ladders, False-keys, Pick-locks and all the other Engines proper for their venerable Trade: He also saw the Coffers, in which he found several pieces of Plate, and other

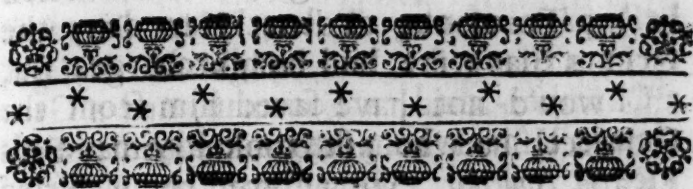
ther Things of value, which sufficiently convinced him of the Merchandize this virtuous Company dealt in : He tyed every Man's Hands behind him, and so conducted them Out. *Crispin* was so confounded that he knew not what Answer to make to the Questions that were ask'd him : The Provost accosted him with these Words : Wicked and abominable Wretch, thou vile Hypocrite, who under the Cloak of Sanctity committest these Villainies : Were not the Alms thou daily receivest from so many Charitable Hands sufficient to subsist thee Honestly and to induce thee to spend thy Life in Praising and serving God in a Place so apt for that purpose as this is, without abandoning thy self to such base and infamous Practices ? Thou art now fallen into my Hands, out of which I promise thee thou shalt never escape, till thou and thy Companions are carryed to the Gallows.

With these just Reproaches he carried them to the Town-prison where they were Condemn'd to Death ; for being put to the Rack they confessed several Crimes, all of them accusing *Crispin* of having given them notice where Booty might be had, and often opened the Doors to them where they might get them. As for him,
he

he had so much Courage and Resolution in his Torments, as stoutly to deny the Crimes that were laid to his charge: But this wou'd not have saved him from the Sentence, had he not cunningly made his Escape out of Prison: For being seized with a violent Fever, his Execution was deferred, tho' that of his Comrades was not, who all fairly swung for their Crimes: And as *Crispin* was upon the point of being sent after them, being now cured of his Illness, he at noon day went boldly out of the Prison-Gates in Woman's Cloaths, to the great Amazement of all that heard of it, and to the no small danger of the Keeper, who was accused of Corruption and Breach of Trust: But he justified himself by discovering the Person who had furnish'd *Crispin* with the disguise, who for that Service was Condemn'd to the Gallies for Ever.

The End of the Third Book.

THE



THE Pole-Cat

O F
S E V I L L E.

Book the Fourth.



RUFINA and *Garay* travelled with the utmost expedition very heavy about the Pocket, and arrived at the Imperial City of *Toledo*, where they had resolved to fix their Abode, and where *Rufina* intended to live in Splendor and Magnificence. To put a varnish upon her Reputation, she called *Garay* her Father; and

and took a very handsome House in the best part of the Town: Her Servants were a Slave she had bought at *Malaga*, a Chamber-Maid, a Footman, and a Gentleman Usher whom she took into her Service at *Toledo*. She assumed the Habit of a Widow, and *Garay* dressing himself in a grave Suit, called himself *Don Geronymo*, and her *Donna Emerentiana*, making bold with *Menesez* for their Surname, for they pretended they were of that Illustrious Family which is so famous in Portugal. She furnished her House in a manner suitable to a Widow of Quality, and was visited by the chief Ladies in the Neighbourhood, who were so pleased both with the Charms of her Person and of her Conversation, that they thought themselves happy in her Acquaintance. It was not long before she had contracted Friendships with several Ladies of Quality, who thought every thing Gold that glistened: And as she did not fail to go regularly to Mass at the great Church, she was seen by the lazy young Sparks of the Town; and being observed as a Lady newly come to *Toledo*, and being a handsome gentile Person, she quickly had a number of Adorers who sought her Favour and offered her their Service?

While

While she is employed in enquiring which of her Lovers is best furnished with Cash, in order to carry on the little Traffick she was born for, and in baiting the Hook she was used to cast out for Purfes, we shall leave her to take her measures and her new Gallants to their amorous Pretensions, that we may take a turn to *Malaga*, where we left Brother *Crispin* escaped from Prison and at full Liberty.

As soon as *Crispin* saw his Legs unshackled and his Neck out of danger of the Halter, he quitted *Malaga*, and hid himself in a Wood near the Town, where he spent the whole Day, and when Night was come he drew near to the Hermitage, where he had dwelt while he was thought by the Town's-people, a good Christian and a Man of a Holy Life. When they heard that he was convicted, they had put in his stead a real good Man, who beg'd Alms at the Churches, to build an Hospital there. He was not yet well settled in the Hermitage, being as yet unprovided of furniture for it. *Crispin* slept thither in the Night time, and having found the Place he lookt for by several Marks which he had placed there for that purpose, he dug up the ground with a Mattock

took which he had left in the Wood, and took out a little Bag stufft with *Dubloons* which was all he had laid up out of what he had got: For he had constantly the greatest share in every Purchase, as a reward for his two Offices of Guide and Concealer to the whole Gang. With these Pistoles, which might be about five or six Hundred, he went to the Town of *Jaen*, where he had a Friend of his own Profession; who having before heard of his Escape out of Prison (about which he had been very uneasy, for he might have confessed some things upon the Rack that might have done him no Service) he was over-joyed to see him, being now in hopes of undertaking new expeditions in his Company. *Crispin* was but in a sorry Equipage, for his Hermit's dress had been taken from him, upon account of his being a Hypocrite unfit to wear it: But as he was well Stockt with Gold, that misfortune was easily remedy'd: He gave his Comrade Money to buy him a Colour'd Suit of Cloaths, which he put on; and having had his long Beard shaved off, and put on a Peruke and a Sword, he look'd quite another Man from what he was before; and his most intimate Acquaintance wou'd scarce have known him. In this Equipage

Equipage he stayed some days at *Jaen*, till an Opportunity offered of committing a considerable Robbery in the Town of *Andujar* of a good Sum of Money, which was very strictly divided between him and his Companion. As they were apprehensive that they might be taken by the diligent pursuit of the Person robbed; *Crispin* was of Opinion they had best withdraw in time, for fear he shou'd be exposed to the same danger from which he Escaped with so much Difficulty at *Malaga*.

They took into their Society a handsome Young Fellow that they met with by chance; a Native of *Valencia*, and arrived all three at *Toledo* where they had never been, except just to pass thro' it. They were therefore confident of not being known there, and the Town being a good one, they designed to stay in it for some time. Their new Comrades Name was *Jaine*, the Son of a Ropemaker of *Valencia*: Having committed some profitable Rogueries there, he was forc'd to leave his Country: He was about Four and Twenty Years Old, and was very well Shaped, Fair, and Handsome; but his Wit was his greatest excellency, and he was a Match either for *Crispin* or his Comrade.

rade. This young Fellow Dressed well at the Expence of those who did not take sufficient care where they laid their Goods. He knew how to alter the Cloaths he stole to make them Fashionable, and he Disguised them so artfully by changing the Trimming that the Owners themselves cou'd not know them again. One great Holiday he put on a very fine Suit and went with *Crispin* to the Great Church to the very same part of it where *Rufina* had placed herself: And tho' she wore a Widow's Habit, as I said before, yet *Crispin* knew 'twas her, to his no small joy. He hid himself from her as well as he cou'd, for fear she shou'd know him as well as he did her; though in that dress he had no cause to be apprehensive of that. His Peruke and the shaving of his Beard wou'd have been Disguise sufficient, though he had not been in a Habit so different from what he wore in the Hermitage. He shewed *Rufina* to his Comrade, *Don Jaime*, who was wonderfully taken with her; and having desired him to follow her unobserved, he dog'd her so cleverly, that he found out the House where she lived. The Neighbours informed him that she lived in good Repute, by the Name of *Donna Emerentiana de Meneses*, being lately come from

from *Badajos* with her Father to settle at *Toledo*. *Crispin* was terribly enraged at her for the Trick she had put upon him at *Malaga*; and he swore that since chance had so luckily thrown her in his way, he wou'd never leave *Toledo* till he had got out of her the Money she had Rob'd him of, with great Interest to boot. To effect his Design, he instructed *Faime* in the Part he was to play, and how he was to behave himself towards her to avoid her finding out who he was. An Opportunity of beginning their Enterprize soon offer'd. One Afternoon, about an hour before it grew dark, as the Bell rung for Prayers, there happen'd a Quarrel in the Street where *Rufina* lived, wherein two Men were Wounded. The Officers of Justice were immediated there, and carried the Wounded Persons to their own Homes for Relief, and siezed some of those that then were in the Street, though not at all concern'd in the Quarrel, which made the rest take to their Heels; for there is no great Pleasure in being imprison'd for another's Crime.

Faime, being fully inform'd by that Arch-Rogue *Crispin* what he shou'd do, assumed the Cross of a Knight of the Order of *Montesa*, which the King gives only

to the Natives of the Kingdom of *Valencia*; and put on a very genteel Black Suit of Cloaths. In this Dress, being come to *Rufina's* House, and having given his Cloak to *Crispin*; he drew his Sword, and went directly in with the Air of a Man extremely apprehensive of some danger: He run strait up Stairs, and at last came into a Room where the Beautiful Widow sat with her Maids. They were strangely terrify'd at seeing a Man approach with his naked Sword, without a Cloak and in so great a Transport. *Rufina* got up, and saw *Faime* draw near her in the posture of a Suppliant, accosting her with these Words: If Pity be not a stranger to so much Beauty, let your House, Madam, be an Asylum to me against the Justice that pursues me. I just now kill'd a Man, I confess; but I did it only in my own Defence, being attack'd by him in the Street at great disadvantage. As I was pursued very hotly in the next Street, I had infallibly been taken if I had not Fought Courageously and dispatch'd two of the Officers that came with the Commissary, and who had almost siezed me by the Throat: I escaped from the rest, by the Swiftness of my Heels: Finding your Doors open, and having no other place to fly to, I made

made bold to shut them after me and run up even to your Chamber. I therefore most humbly beseech you, Madam, if possibly it can be done without incommoding you too much, to let me lie hid in some Corner of your House, 'till the Crowd that's gather'd together in your Street be dispersed and I may go out with Safety: But if I shall give you the least Trouble, or have any ways offended you by my Boldness; give me but the least hint of it, and I will immediately venture forth into the Street, even tho' I were sure to lose my Life by so doing; for I had much rather be thrown into a Dungeon, than seem Impudent in the Opinion of so Lovely a Lady.

We have already described the good Shape and agreeable Behaviour of this Spark. *Rufina* look'd upon him attentively; and she who never before had loved any thing but Money; began to find in herself an Inclination for this young Man, who was as Eloquent as he was Handsome. She made him this Answer. You did me Justice, Sir, when you thought me sensible both of Honour and Pity; Persons of my Quality never wanted either for Men of your Appearance: I judge by your Looks that you are a Gentleman; and in pity

of your Case, my House is entirely at your Service, and you may be concealed in it as long as you think it will be necessary, to avoid the Pursuit of those that are in quest of you : for it wou'd be inhumane to let you fall into their Hands, when by my means you may be preserved from such Imminent danger. Fear nothing while you are here : For though the Officers shou'd search my House, I have a secret place in it which they can never find you out.

The young Sharper return'd her a thousand thanks for so great a Favour ; which obliged her to continue her Discourse as follows. You certainly know, Sir, by the Weeds I am in, that I must live in a great deal of restraint ; however, I offer you my House with all the Sincerity imaginable. till you have accommodated your Affairs. But I have an absent Father to whom I owe an account of my Conduct : And if at his Arrival, which perhaps may be this very Day, he will let you have a Chamber in his Apartment, in which I dare say he will think himself much Honour'd, I shall be extreamly glad of it. He again thank'd her for this Continuation of her Favours ; and she every Moment thought him more and more agreeable.

In the mean time the rest of those that were in the Plot, Thundered at the Door, bawling out to the People within to open to his Majesty's Officers. The whole Family was at first mightily alarm'd; but *Rufina* being recovered from that little Disorder, which had flush'd into her Face, took *Jaime* by the hand, and led him into an Upper Room, wherein there was a double Partition, concealed by a piece of Tapestry, and left him there, assuring him that it wou'd be impossible to discover him in that Place. After this Precaution she caused the Door to be opened, and *Crispin* rush'd boldly in, without the least fear of being known in the Disguise he had on. He was accompanied by some Fellows of his own Degree of Honesty, who with Lights and Fire-Arms, counterfeiting the Officers of Justice, entered tumultuously into the Chamber where *Rufina* was. *Crispin* saluted her very civilly, and disguising his Voice, as he had done all his Person, I very well know, Madam, says he, that 'tis rude to enter so roughly into the House of a Widow: But my Office will excuse me, and I am obliged to search where-ever I am commanded. The Lieutenant Criminal has order'd me to search all the Houses in this Quarter, for

a Criminal that has Escaped us. We have made our perquisition in all the Neighbouring Houses, but to no purpose ; and this is the only one we have not yet been in : Be pleased then to give us leave to look over your House, that we may satisfie both our Superiors and our own Consciences. You may depend, reply'd she, upon the Protestations I make to you, that no Creature is concealed in my House : But that you may not entertain an ill Opinion of me, nor think me a Woman that wou'd protect a Murtherer, or a Man of an ill Life ; I give you leave to search where you think fit. A Maid took a Candle to light them, and they visited a great many of the Rooms ; however, not with too much Rigour, having a mind to seem mighty Courteous in the Execution of their duty. This done, they took their leaves with the same Civility they had accosted *Rufina*.

The pretended Knight came out of his Hole, appearing extreamly rejoyced at being so happily Escaped out of the Hands of his Pursuers, and in Terms full of Acknowledgement he highly exaggerated the Favour he had receiv'd of the Beautiful Widow. She, who the more she viewed him, the more she was pleased with

with him, gave him a thousand Demonstrations of Friendship, and assured him he shou'd be used in her Family according to his Merit ; and that if he wou'd have patience to stay till her Father return'd, she was certain he wou'd not suffer him to go out of the House for that Night. The Gallant, who perceived her Ladyship began to take Fire, earnestly desired Permission to retire, which he was sure he shou'd not obtain: He said too it was necessary for him to take refuge in some Convent of Monks, and to give his Servants notice of the place he was in ; and that it wou'd be his best way to fly towards *Seville* early next Morning. *Rufina*, uneasie to find him so obstinate, press'd him more than ever to stay ; represented to him the danger he ran, and conjured him at least to grant her two Hours more of his Company. *Faime* who desired no better, seem'd to consent with reluctance. She desired leave to go a Minute to give orders about some Affairs which her Father had left her a charge of, and under this pretence went to consult with a Slave in whom she mightily confided, what she were best to do. She retired with her into another Room, and frankly discovered to her the Inclination she had to

that Cavalier; that though it grieved her to part with him, yet she knew not how *Garay* might take it, if she shou'd keep him in the House all Night: And lastly, beg'd her to give her Advice upon these Difficulties, and to let her know what in her Opinion she had best resolve upon. The Slave, who was a cunning Jade, and knew very well what Advice wou'd be most agreeable to her Mistress, answer'd, I own, Madam, you will seem too easie if upon the little Acquaintance you have with this Cavalier, you open your Heart to him; and in my Opinion you would be as indiscreet if you went about to persuade *Garay* to let him be in the House for to Night. My Advice is, that since there are two or three Rooms empty, from one of which there is an Entrance into your Apartment, you had better lodge him there, without saying a word of it to any body. I will take care to conduct him thither, when I have made him a Bed; and to provide him with whatever he may want, without *Garay's* Knowledge. You know *Garay* two Days hence is to go to *Madrid*; and then you may entertain this young Gentleman without any Fear or Obstacle: I can easily make him believe that the Officers keep Watch still
about

about this Street, and that therefore it is absolutely necessary for him to stay here, if he wou'd not endanger his Life, or his Liberty.

This Advice of the Slave's was wonderfully liked by *Rufina*, who ordered her to go that moment and put Sheets upon the Bed, and make the Room ready for his Reception. This was immediately done ; and then the Amorous Widow returned to her Gallant : You will wonder, Sir, says she, at my receiving you into the House, and at Night too without my Father's Permission ; but to save a Cavalier of your Merit, we are allow'd sometimes to exceed the Bounds of Decency. I begin to think it will be properer to conceal you from my Father, as well as from the Officers, that you may be the Safer. You may be obliged to me if you please for this little Service ; but I do it with a very good Will, and because I think it necessary for your Repose. *Faime*, who perceived that this Fish threw herself voluntarily into the Nets of Love, gave a thousand Tokens of Acknowledgement for this new Favour. They spent the time in a thousand agreeable Discourses : And *Faime*, who was very eloquent at Flattery, rendering himself every moment more agreeable, by praising

all *Rufina's* Charms one after another, made himself at last the absolute Master of her Heart. However, she was willing to try, whether there was no deceit in his Words; whether her Beauty alone had conquered him; and whether it had really made so sudden a Metamorphosis of a fearful disordered Fugitive into a bold daring Lover.

The Slave now came in and told her Mistress she had done as she order'd her. She took *Faime* by the Hand, and led him into the Chamber that was prepared for him: He found it handsomely illuminated, by a Chrystal Branch; and there was a magnificent Collation ready set: He was surprized to see her leave him immediately alone; but he was satisfy'd with the Excuse she made, which was, that she wou'd return the moment her Father was gone to Bed. At leaving the Room, she gave him so kind, so tender a glance, that this new Demonstration of Love encouraged *Faime* to hope for a successful end of his Undertaking. *Garay* was not yet so far advanced in Years, but that he thought himself fit to pretend to the possession of *Rufina*: He was her Gallant, and if he had not had a Wife already, had moved her to make him her Husband.

He

He kept his Wife at *Madrid*; and she, in imitation of several others who see themselves despised and neglected, endeavour'd to Comfort herself for the Absence of her Husband in the Company of her Lovers. *Garay* had not heard from her a great while; and being in hopes she might be dead, he was resolved to take a Journey to *Madrid*, to enquire secretly whether his wishes were verified or no; to the intent that if she was gone where troublesome Wives (in some Folks Opinions) shou'd be, he might strike up a Match with *Rufina*, who was obliged to him for several pieces of Service. With this Design it was that he had fixed upon this Journey, and in two Days he was to set out.

Let us leave him to his Design, and return to *Rufina*, who caused his Supper to be brought in the moment he came home, and pretending some Indisposition, excused herself from keeping him Company. As he was used to go to Bed the moment he had Supp'd, *Rufina* waited till she heard that he was certainly asleep, before she went to her Gallant, with whom she supp'd very nobly. As soon as the Cloath was taken away, while the Servants were at Supper, *Rufina*, who cou'd not keep
her

her Eyes off of her Guest, beg'd him to conceal no part of his Life from her; but to tell her sincerely, his Name, his Country, and the Cause of his coming to *Toledo*. *Faime*, upon this Intreaty, invented the following Romance, which she readily swallowed.

The place of my Nativity, Madam, is *Valencia*, one of the Noblest Cities in all *Spain*: You certainly know it by the Report of Fame, and that it has a very great advantage over several others, both for the Nobility and Richness of its Inhabitants, and for the Sweetness of its Climate and the charming Fertility of its Fields.

I am of the Noble and Ancient Family of *Pertusa*, very well known all over the Kingdom of *Valencia*. My Name is *Don Faime de Pertusa*, and the King, in Recompence of the good Services my Ancestors have done him, has honoured me with the order of *Montesa*, and with the Commandry of *Silla*; which is the best belonging to that Order. Besides the Income of that, I have an Estate which was left me by my Father, and some other Revenues, which in all may amount to about three Thousand Crowns a year. I became enamoured of a Lady in our City,
named

named *Donna Blanca Ceinteillas*, descended of one of the Illustrious Families of *Biscay*, and endued with a great many admirable Qualities: I served her with all the Passion imaginable; but she did not make me a suitable Return, being engaged with another Cavalier, call'd *Don Vincent Poiadas*; and as she preferr'd my Rival before me, I was ready to die with Jealousie. That Cavalier was resolved to remove every thing that might impede his Pretensions; and therefore one Night, meeting me in the Street, and he being follow'd by three Servants he attacked me and one single Man that attended me.

I defended my self as long as I cou'd, but was at last wounded, as they thought, mortally. The Man that Wounded me cou'd never be discovered, though every one suspected who it was: But it being the common Report that *Don Vincent* was my Competitor, he was taken up; but having justified himself either by Favour, or Money, he was released. Being cured of my Wounds, and reflecting on the advantage with which my Rival had attacked me; I was resolved to be revenged, and to pay him in his own Coyn. I surpris'd him with a number of Followers on my side Superior to his, and left him wounded much

much more dangerously than I had been. There were some People in the Street that knew me, and deposed against me; a Practice very uncommon in *Valencia*, where Truth is very seldom found out by that Method. For this reason I absented my self; because my Enemy's Hurts were very dangerous, and the Surgeons told him he cou'd live but a very short time. I found his Relations were fixed upon revenging his Death, and was apprehensive of falling into the hands of Justice. This was what obliged me to leave *Valencia*, and come to this City where I have been about a Month. I have been informed by a Person of vast Correspondence, that my Rival is now out of danger and almost wholly recovered, and that the Contract between him and *Donna Blanca* is settled; which was a greater Concern to me, than the being this Day attack'd by two Men, who were hired by *Don Vincent* to come hither to dispatch me. They attack'd me in this Street; one of them I believe I have Wounded mortally, so that I escaped from their Hands by the assistance of those that ran in to part us. I found your Doors open, and having taken refuge in your House, am perfectly safe from every thing
but

but the Power of your Eyes. Thus I escape one Prison to fall into a Another; but this is so sweet a Captivity, that I will remain in it all my Life, if you give your Consent.

Here the pretended *Don Jaime* concluded his Narration, leaving *Rufina* extremely pleased to observe in that Cavalier so many amiable Qualifications, and such seeds of Affection in his Heart, that she flatter'd herself she might easily draw him in to marry her; which having a little thought of, she made him this Answer: Seignior *Don Jaime Pertusa*, I am extremely sorry for the unfortunate Accident that brought us acquainted; but I am not at all so for the design you have form'd of not returning quickly into your Native Country; for I should be extremely glad to keep you here; and I freely protest that if for my part I had interest enough in you to do it, I wou'd not scruple any means whatsoever even though upon Conditions destructive of my Liberty. If for nothing else, at least you are somewhat obliged to me for the Good Will I bear you, in the little time that I have had the honour to know you: And if it cou'd induce you to make a Return, I shou'd think my self the happiest of Women, and shall

shall have accomplished my utmost Wish. Perhaps Heaven may not have made me Mistress of so much Beauty as you deserve: But I dare boast that my Virtue and Wealth may be sufficient to please a Man of your Merit and Quality.

Madam, reply'd *Don Jaime*, I can hardly forbear kissing the Ground you Tread on, though I am not worthy to touch it with my Mouth, after the Favour you bless me with. Yet I cannot think I have received any from you, which I have not already in some measure repay'd, since I have put you in full possession of my Heart and Soul. As for the Distrust you seem to have of your own Perfections, you certainly need employ but part of them to conquer me; I find, Madam, you have compleatly done it already; and therefore you need have Recourse to no further Measures for that purpose, where your Beauty is so irresistible: It has transported me quite beyond my self, and made me your Slave. Happy was the Day that I was attacked by those Assassins; for by means of this Misfortune, I have gained a thousand causes for Joy and Consolation in your Words. May Heaven now prolong my Life, for if my Love is approved, as you do me the Honour to assure me it is, I shall rest hereafter

ter contented and safe in the Haven of your good Graces, which will make me quite forget the Pleasures I enjoy'd at Home, when I find such a Paradise here.

These and the like Amorous Discourses passed between *Faime* and *Rufina*; and that Cunning Dissembler hit upon the way to please her so exactly, that she thought of nothing but how to make herself agreeable in his Eyes. Time ran swiftly away in this Conversation, so that it was two o' Clock in the Morning before *Rufina* retired to her Chamber, and she even thought that too soon: *Faime* too went directly to Bed, overjoy'd at seeing his Comrade's design attended with such good Success.

Crispin was very uneasie at not having heard any thing from his Emissary, all that nor the preceeding Day; *Garay's* presence was the occasion of it; but so soon as he was departed for *Madrid*, the Amorous *Rufina* breathed with more Freedom, and *Faime* had then an Opportunity of informing *Crispin* by a Letter which he sent by the Slave, how he had insinuated himself into *Rufina's* Affection. *Crispin* Answered him by the same Conveyance, and at the same time sent him a Purse of a hundred

dred Pistoles, to enable him to play with his Mistress, and bribe the Servants into his Interest; which might come to be of Use.

The Day that *Garay* set out for *Madrid*, *Rufina* was engaged in receiving a Visit from two of her Neighbours, which made her very uneasy; for she had much rather have been with her Gallant. The Moment they were dispatch'd, she went to *Don Jaime's* Chamber (for so we shall call him, while the Trick continues.) She found him diverting himself with a Lute, which the Slave had lent him; for he was an excellent Musician, and made very good Verses; a Gallantry common to the Natives of *Valencia*, who have a great Genius that way: and *Jaime* was Master of those two Qualifications in a great degree of Perfection. *Rufina* hearing him at a distance, stole softly to his Chamber, ravished with the Sweet Harmony of his Lute, whose Strings he touched with wonderful Skill; and she listen'd unseen for some time, finding he was going to sing somewhat; which he did with admirable Grace, having made the Words himself, which were upon the subject of his Love. This was throwing more Fuel upon the Fire which burnt in *Rufina's* Breast. Indeed, he sung
very

very agreeably, and had an admirable Voice: But especially she observed that the Words he sung were written by himself upon her, and upon the Accident which had happen'd to him.

The Amorous *Rufina*, coming into the Room, How, said she, Seignior *Don Jaime*, have you still more Graces concealed? I am extreamly glad, though not at all surprized to find it; for I know there are excellent Voices that come from *Valencia*. Mine is a very bad one, answer'd he; and I sung more for the sake of the Words, than to shew my Skill. I perceive, reply'd she, the Song is very new, I believe hardly two Days old. 'Tis true, said *Don Jaime*, but that is not at all to be wondred at; for the Subject it was writ upon, has so great a Power over me, that she cou'd make me undertake even Impossibilities; so far she exceeds all the Rarities I ever admired. Do not turn Flatterer, said she; but though I am persuaded that what you say is not Truth; from you I receive it without the least Anger: Yet I think you ought to use your Host more sincerely, but Men are used to say what they do not think; and though they are not at all touched with Love, they very well know how to feign it. You may be deceived

deceived in this, Madam, said he ; and I beg you wou'd believe me when I tell you that I think my self extremely blest in having been engag'd in this Quarrel, since it has procured me the Honour of your Acquaintance. All the Request I make you, is, that you wou'd be convinced of my Sincerity, and not doubt me when I say I love you above all things.

Don Jaime said so many other things of the same nature, that *Rufina* resolved to give him the greatest Marks of her Passion ; insomuch that the Sharper desisted from the Enterprize he came upon, and began to love her in reality. She seriously believed that her Guest was truly what he had told her of himself, and what fix'd her in this belief, was the liberty he took to ask Her, in his turn, what she was. She was unwilling he should think her inferior in Quality to himself ; and therefore in few Words told him she was descended from the Illustrious Counts of *Meneses* of *Portugal*, though she was Born in the Town of *Badajos*. *Jaime* knew she paid him in his own Coyn, and that her end therein was to engage him to Marry her : This was directly contrary to *Crispin's* Intention, who would not for the World have consented to such a Match.

Rufina

Rufina grew more and more enamoured of her young Guest, and he on his part bent his whole Study upon the means to encrease her Passion : So that both concurring in the same Desire, *Rufina* threw aside all manner of Restraint, and *Faime* obtained the last Favour. As she was extremely troubled with the apprehension of *Garay's* Return, which she knew would be speedy, she considered with her self the Ties which bound her to continue faithful to him ; that he was believed all over the City to be her Father ; and that he wou'd be violently provoked to find she had deserted him in that manner. She at first thought of giving him a Sum of Money in private and to take her leave of him ; but she considered better of it, and then resolved to quit *Toledo* before he came back, and to prevail with *Don Faime* to carry her to his native Country of *Valencia*. She therefore intended to declare her self to him in two or three Days, *Garay* not being to return in a Fortnight, as he told her before his Departure.

While *Rufina* was taken up with these thoughts, she and her Gallant spent the time very Merrily ; and he being now in reality passionately in Love with her, resolved to desist entirely from his first Intention,

tention, let *Crispin* take it how he would. 'Twas in the long Nights of Winter ; so that the two Lovers spent them very agreeably, intermixing their Caresses with Amorous Discourse and Songs. As *Rufina* had given him instances of her Skill in the latter, they sung together in Consort, and marry'd their Voices to a Musical Instrument. One Night, after having Sung, and Discoursed of several things, *Rufina* desired her Gallant to entertain her and her Maids with some thing that might divert them : And particularly, if he knew any Novel that might make the Night seem short, she beg'd he would tell it her. The Young Spark, who was good at every thing, and had an excellent Wit, obey'd his Mistress, to shew the other Perfections he was Master of, and said to her : Though to one of your Qualifications, adorable *Emerentiana*, and my Dear Mistress, my Discourse will seem very common ; yet to shew you how punctual I will be in doing whatever you command me, I will immediately obey you exclusive of all other considerations, and since I do it without any previous Study, you will the more readily excuse the Faults I may commit : Therefore, having been told the following story by a Cavalier of *Valencia*,
and

and thinking it very agreeable, I will tell it you in the best manner I can. He paused a little, and then began as follows.

In the great and famous City of *Seville*, the *Metropolis* of *Andaluzia*, the Mother of so many Noble Families, and excellent Wits, the Treasury of all the Wealth which flows into *Spain* from the *West-Indies*, was Born *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, a very accomplished Cavalier, of the Illustrious Family of the Dukes of *Alcala*, so highly esteemed all over the Kingdom. By their Death, from whom he derived his being in this World, there fell to him an Estate of Four Thousand Crowns Annual Rent, upon which he lived very Nobly at *Seville*, being the most remarkable Person at all publick Actions done about the City. He had at *Madrid* a *Cousin-German* who followed the *Spanish* Court, and was gone thither about some Affairs of great Importance, which he had brought to a happy Issue.

Having lived there a while, he liked it, and the Conversation of the Cavaliers inhabiting it, so well, that he Exchanged the Place of his Birth, for that Illustrious City. He there became intimately acquainted with an old Cavalier, whose
Name

Name was *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, a Person who had raised himself into a general Esteem, by the Excellent Endowments he had. Besides which, he was honoured with the Illustrious Order of the Patron of *Spain*, with a Commandery of Two Thousand Ducats of Annual Rent.

This old Gentleman was a Widower, having but one only Daughter, to whom all his vast Estate was to fall at his Death. Nature it seems had made it her particular Concern to enrich this young Lady, with all the Graces and Perfections to be wished in one of her Sex. Which occasioned the Envy of all the Ladies about the Court towards her, since she had, in point of Beauty, the same Advantages over them, as the Sun has over all the rest of the Planets. Her Father *Don Alonzo*, wished her well Married to his Mind, that is, to one equal to her, in Estate and Extraction. *Don Martinio de Mendoza*, (so was called *Don Antonio's* Cousin whom I spoke of first) might have aspired to the Honour of making his Addresses to her, as well upon Account of the House, from which he was descended, as the Familiar Acquaintance there was between him and her Father *Don Alonzo*.

But

But being a younger Brother, he thought himself too low, in point of Estate, to pretend to so advantageous a Match. However, he thought fit to make some Proposals to the old Gentleman, on the behalf of his Cousin *Don Antonio*, who lived at *Seville*, whom he highly recommended to him for his Excellent Qualities, and the greatness of his Estate; for he was the only Son of a Noble House. *Don Alonzo* took it very kindly from him, but thought it withal Prudence, to make further enquiry into the Business; knowing that Persons speaking for their own Relations, are commonly very partial, and think it no mortal Sin to exceed the Truth. So that *Don Alonzo*, immediately writ to a particular Friend at *Seville*, earnestly desiring him to give him an Account of the Person and Estate, of *Don Antonio de Mendoza*; inasmuch as it highly concerned the Honour of his House, to meet with a Cavalier worthy his Alliance, to be Husband to his only Daughter, *Donna Catharina*.

'Twas not long e're he received an Answer, wherein his Friend confirmed all that *Don Martinio* had said of his Kinsman, with somewhat more; protesting in the Conclusion, That he was so far from be-

P

ing

ing partial or insincere, in the Account he had sent him, that he rather told less than Truth. He thereupon went to *Don Martinio*, and told him, that he might write to his Cousin, and assured him he should be very welcome, if he had any Inclinations for his Daughter. He made him Answer, that he would, and *Don Alonso*, as a further Obligation, would have his Daughter's Picture sent him, that he might therein find some of the rare Qualities that were in her ; permitting his Cousin, to be present at the taking of it, that he might assure *Don Antonio*, the Painter had not flattered her, and that the Copy was below the Original.

Don Martinio failed not to write to his Cousin, to whom he also sent the Picture, celebrating the Vertues of that amiable Person, which the Painter could not represent, as he had done the Lineaments of her beautiful Countenance. His Cousin *Don Antonio* was extremely satisfied therewith, and referred to him to make some Overtures in the Treaty of Marriage, 'till he came thither himself ; for the farther Prosecution whereof, he sent him a full Power.

In the mean time, *Don Antonio* was preparing for his Journey to *Madrid*, to wait
on

on his Mistress, who having received his Picture, was as much taken with it, as he had been with hers ; leaving his Retinue at *Seville*, 'till a rich Livery, then making, was finished. He began his Journey, having only one Person to wait on him, and a Groom to look to their Mules, who followed them at a little distance. *Don Antonio* carried always about him his Mistress's Picture inclosed in the same Letter, wherein his Cousin had sent it him. Being come within half a Days Journey of *Toledo* he sent away the Groom, to provide Lodgings for them in the City. He had entertained at a Dinner some of the Inhabitants of *Orgaz*, which was the Place where they had baited. The Cloth being taken away, they fell to Cards : He lost his Money, and was vexed, which occasioned their playing on 'till he had recovered his Losses ; and by that time it was grown later than he could have wished. Being horsed, he and his Man put forward, but e're they had rode a League, Night surprized them, so that they made a shift to lose their way, and got in among certain Olive Trees, about half a League short of *Toledo*. Not knowing where they were, and fearing to go too far out of their way, they thought it their

best Course to alight, and rest themselves under one of the Olive Trees, 'till it were Day. They accommodated themselves the best they could, and Weariness soon laid them asleep; but they little dreamed of the Misfortune which was to happen to them. Being in their first Sleep, (which is commonly the soundest) four Men came to the place, very softly, for the Noise of their Mules brought them thither; and these were of a Profession, which for the most part finds those that are of it more Work by Night than by Day. They had been upon a Design which had not taken, and so they were returning very disconsolate with empty Pockets to *Toledo*.

Coming up to them, and finding them both asleep, they tied their Hands behind them, and took away all they had, but their Waistcoats and Drawers; and to get off with more speed and safety, they made use of their Mules. *Don Antonio*, being thus basely surprized, was exasperated at the Misfortune; but his Man told him that it had happened to them through his Fault, because he had not given over Playing sooner. They discoursed of it, 'till the Birds gave them Notice of the approach of *Aurora*. Soon after hearing the
the

the Noise of some Cattel not far from them, they called to him that looked after them, very much bemoaning the Condition they were in. They asked him, how far it was to *Toledo*, and he told them it was not quite half a League, but if they would go along with him to a Country-House hard by, he would gladly shew them the way, and that he doubted not, but the Lady, who lived in it, would relieve them in that Extremity.

They took his Advice, and he brought them to a very fair House. Having knocked at the Gate it was immediately opened by an old Man, who was Steward to the Lady, and had the over-sight of the Shepherds, and the Profits arising from the Sheep. The Shepherd who brought them thither, went in to the Lady, and in a few Words gave her an Account of the Misfortune that happened to those Strangers, and the Condition he had found them in. Whereupon she ordered them to be brought up to her Chamber. *Don Antonio* presented himself to her, very much out of Countenance to see himself almost Naked; having upon him only an old Coat, which the Shepherd had lent him. He told her that his Journey was for *Madrid*, about a Law-Suit of great Importance

portance, not discovering who he was, but only that he was a Gentleman of *Seville*, named *Don Torpino de Hezzo*. The Lady, whose Name was *Donna Olivia*, was much troubled to see him in that deplorable Condition. There were in the House two Chests full of Cloaths, which had been a Brother's of hers, who Died not long before. She ordered two Suits to be brought out, which they put on, that which *Don Antonio* had, proving so fit, that the Lady was much taken with his Person, and had her Eyes always fastened on him. She invited *Don Antonio* to Dine with her, which he did, taking occasion ever and anon, to make extraordinary Acknowledgments of the Favours he had received from her.

They continued two Days in that Country-House, e're the Lady made any discovery of the Affections she had for *Don Antonio*; save only what she did with her Eyes, which were the silent Interpreters of the Trouble she was in. *Don Antonio* was not insensible of it, and had some Discourse concerning it with his Man; yet had he not the Confidence to tell him what he really thought of it, being (as he was) upon the Point of disposing himself otherwise. The Servant advised him
not.

not to let slip so fair an Opportunity; and told him he should not be so hard-hearted, towards a Lady of so great Worth, and one that had so highly obliged them. The Solitude of the Place, the Beauty of the Lady, and the silent Discoveries she made him by her Gestures obliged *Don Antonio* to answer her Affection. He entred into some Love Discourses with her; but though she was really in Love with him, yet would she not grant him any particular Favour, unless he first assured her she should be his Wife, and that she had a Promise of it under his Hand.

Don Antonio, on the other side, had so great a Kindness for her, that he had in a manner forgot the Mistress, whose Picture he had carried about him, and advising with his Servant, (who was a dangerous Confident, and a subtil Fellow) what he should do; he told him very roundly, that he ought not to let slip so sweet and favourable an Opportunity; that he might easily have the Enjoyment of her, and withal give her the Promise of Marriage she desired, provided he put not into it his own Name, but filled it with the Suppositious Name he had assumed; since she knew neither his Coun-

try nor Extraction. *Don Antonio* followed his Advice, and thereupon had his Desires of *Donna Olivia*, who having made the Blot, could do no less than give him leave to enter. He continued there four Days, at the end whereof, acquainting the Lady that his Business at *Madrid* was of such Importance as required his personal Attendance there, she consented to his Departure, on Condition he would return again as soon as he could ; which he with Oaths, promised to do.

The next Morning betimes, he departed, leaving the Lady o'er-whelm'd with Tears : He was somewhat troubled, or at least pretended it. The Lady having furnished him with all things necessary, he put forward ; but e're he had gone far, he received some part of the Chastisement which he deserved for his Perfidiousness ; for the Mule he was mounted on, being apt to start, gave him a fall, whereby he so sprained one Foot, that he was forced to make some stay at *Illescas*, a Place half-way between *Toledo* and *Madrid*, and to send for Surgeons to set all things right again.

Leaving him there confined to his Chamber for some Days ; let us return to *Donna Olivia*, who very much bewailed the Absence

sence of her Gallant, the very thought of whom, caused her no small Affliction. A Servant of hers who had made the Bed where he lay, found under the Bolster, a Picture of the Lady whom *Don Antonio* was to be Married to, folded up in a Letter which his Cousin had writ to him from *Madrid*, which she delivered to her Mistress, who opening the Paper, saw the Picture, whereat she was much disquieted; but she was much more astonished, when she cast her Eye on the ensuing Letter, which contained these Words :

Dearest Cousin,

YOU will receive herein inclosed the Picture of the Lady *Donna Catharina de Castiza*, which is very exactly taken from the Original; I doubt not but the Charms of her Beauty will oblige you to hasten your Journey. Her Father, *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, expects you with great Impatience. In the mean time, the Contract of Marriage is a drawing up, and will be ready, before you be here to sign it. Assure your self you will be extremely satisfied, that you have found so excellent a Wife. I am,

Your Affectionate Cousin,

Don Martinio de Mendoza.

P 5

Donna

Donna Olivia had scarcely come to the Period of this Letter, but through the Trouble she received at the reading of it; she fell into a Swoon, and continued therein above half an Hour, in the Arms of her Maid. At last she came to her self, bursting into Sighs and Tears. She railed at the *Sevillian* Impostor, but much more at her own Simplicity, that she had so lightly prostituted her Honour to an unknown Person, whom so strange an Adventure had brought to her House. She spent that whole Day in weeping and bemoaning her Misfortune: But considering withal, what hazard her Reputation was in; she resolved it should not be said of her, that she had been so basely affronted by any Man. Whereupon, with the light she received from the Letter, of the Occasion of his Journey, and the Person to whom he was to be Married, she put things in Order for her Removal to *Madrid*; which she might better do than any other, in regard she had not any Kinsman near enough to whom she might communicate her Intention. She communicated her Design to *Dilario*, an old Servant of hers, who had brought her up from the Cradle, and was very glad to wait on her. Upon this Resolution, she caused two
Waggons

Waggon to be loaden with all things necessary to furnish a House fit to receive a Person of Quality, and took her way towards *Madrid*. Being come thither, she commanded her Servant *Dilario*, to enquire whereabouts lived *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, and whether the young Cavalier, whom he intended to make his Son-in-Law, were come from *Seville*. She understood by him, that he was not yet come, but that they expected him, which much troubled the Lady, who knew nothing of the Accident that had happened to him near *Illescas*.

The first thing this affronted Lady did, was to take a House for her self near that of *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, and ordered *Dilario* to live in it as Master thereof: That done, she sent him to *Don Alonzo's*, to enquire whether he wanted a waiting Gentlewoman, for she would disguise her self, that she might not be known by *Don Antonio*. The Business had the effect she desired, for *Donna Catharina* was then enquiring for a Widow to wait on her; a Custom much practised in *Spain*, where Ladies of Quality have several of them, who being Widows they call *Duenna's*. When this was proposed by *Dilario*, who went under the Name of Father to his Mistress,

Mistress, *Donna Catharina* not only received her into her Service ; but her Father *Dilario*, was entertained into *Don Alonzo's*. *Dilario* gave his Mistress an Account of his Negotiation, whereat she was extremely satisfied : So that having put her self into the Habit of a *Duenna*, she went the next Day to present her self to *Donna Catharina*, conducted by her pretended Father, *Dilario*. They were both very kindly entertained by *Don Alonzo de Castiza*, and his Daughter. *Donna Olivia* wished she had not been so handsome, that the Suitor she expected might be the less taken with her ; however, she courageously resolved to prosecute the Imposture she was engaged in. *Donna Catharina* asked *Dilario* what Country-Man he was ? He told her that he was Born at a place called *Utrera*, near *Seville* ; that his Name was *Jacob de Grenatus* (by which we shall henceforth call him) that his Daughter had been Married to a Merchant of that City, who died as he was going for the *West-Indies* ; leaving so great Debts behind him, that all his Estate went to satisfy his Creditors.

Don Alonzo hearing that *Grenatus* was of *Andaluzia*, asked him, whether he had liyed any time at *Seville* ? He told him that

that he had often been in that City, but that his Daughter had lived there. *Don Alonzo* would not at that time enquire any farther, nor enter into any Discourse with him concerning *Don Antonio de Mendoza*. *Donna Olivia* was entertained as *Duenna* to *Donna Catharina*, who took such an Affection to her, that she trusted her with all her Keys, to the great Discontent of her other Servants, who had lived with her many Years. *Grenatus* told them that he had a House of his own, not far from *Don Alonzo's*, and a Wife (for *Flora* an ancient Maid of *Donna Olivia* was to Act that part) whereupon he had ~~no~~ Lodgings assigned him in *Don Alonzo's*.

It is now time we return to *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, who being recovered of his Fall, came to *Madrid*, and lighted at the House of his Cousin *Martinio*, who was much troubled that he had not been there sooner. He told him the Cause of it, and gave him a particular Account of all that had passed in *Donna Olivia's* Country-House, even to the Promise he had made her, under a feigned Name. *Don Martinio* asked him, what Quality the Lady was of? Whereto he answered, that her Name was *Donna Olivia de Priola*, and that she was of one of the most Noble Families of *Toledo*.

Toledo. *Don Martinio* was very much dissatisfied with his Procedure, reprehending him with the unworthy Action he had committed in abusing and dishonouring that Lady, and that it was to be feared, she might hear of his coming to *Madrid*, in order to a Marriage to another, and find means to be revenged for that Affront.

They afterwards fell into Discourse concerning *Donna Catharina*, and *Don Antonio* told him, he extremely fancied the Picture he had seen of her, but that with the other things he had been robbed of, he had lost it: Though he knew well enough, he had left it under the Beds-head at *Donna Olivia's*, which troubled him not a little; however he dissembled it. *Don Martinio* told *Don Antonio*, that it were requisite he put himself into other Apparel, before he waited on his Mistress, and that he must keep within Doors 'till it was ready. Within two Days a very fair Riding Suit was brought him, wherein, pretending he was but newly come to Town, he goes to the House of *Don Alonso de Castiza*, by whom he was received with great Demonstrations of Kindness. Notice was immediately carried up to *Donna Catharina*, that the Person designed to be her Husband was coming up to her Chamber,

Chamber, where she was with her Maids about her, who had just made an end of dressing her. *Don Antonio* coming in, (conducted by *Don Alonzo* and *Don Martinio*) was infinitely satisfied at the Sight of his Mistress, whom he very civilly and discreetly Saluted; for he was a Person of an Excellent Wit, and a confident Carriage and Demeanour. He found by the Original of *Donna Catharina*, that the Painter had done his Work very faithfully; a Vertue not much practised by Painters, especially upon such Occasions as that was. He was ravished to see so great a Beauty, and she on the other side was well satisfied with the handsome Personage of *Don Antonio*.

There were yet some things to be done in order to the absolute Conclusion of the Marriage, at which there was a Necessity of *Don Antonio's* Presence Whereupon he, *Don Alonzo* and *Don Martinio*, withdrew into another Room, where they locked themselves in with a Notary, and some Friends, who were to be Witnesses at the Articles of the Agreement.

Donna Catharina continued all that time in her Chamber, with her Servants talking of *Don Antonio*, her Husband to be; every one Congratulating her good Fortune,

tune, save only *Donna Olivia*, who saying nothing at all, her Mistress observed it ; and being all alone with her, *Donna Artimisa*, (said she to her, for that was the Name she had assumed) whence comes it, that while all the rest Celebrate the Happiness of my Choice, you only are Silent ? Methinks you might have contributed somewhat to the Publick Congratulation, though you had done it only out of Complaisance ; I pray give me some Reason for it. *Donna Olivia* had done it purposely, in Prosecution of her Design, and this Question came as seasonably as she could have wished it, so that she made her this Answer. As to the Person of *Don Antonio*, Madam, there is not any thing to be said against it, nay, he is so Accomplished that there is not any thing to be wished in him which he is not already possessed of. My Silence proceeds hence, that I had a particular Knowledge of him at *Seville* ; for I lived in a Quarter of the City, which he much frequented. I neither will, nor ought to conceal from you the Occasion of his so often coming thither : For it is my Duty to be faithful to you, as having no other Design than to serve you, and endeavour your quiet, so as that you may not live in a perpetual Disenjoyment of your self all the rest of your Days. Know then, Madam, that if you Match your
self

self with Don Antonio, you will be brought to a kind of civil Death, instead of receiv^{ing} the Satisfaction of Wedlock. Donna Catharina was much astonished at this Discourse; and pressed her Duenna, to discover to her more clearly, what she had but too great a Desire to tell her: Whereupon intreating her to retire into a more secret place, where they might not be observed by her other Women, Donna Olivia gave her this malicious Account, of the perfidious Don Antonio.

I should not live with the Respect and Duty I owe you, as my Mistress, nor according to the Affection I bear you, if I expressed not my self clearly to you in a Business wherein you are so highly concerned, and on which depends your greatest Felicity in this World: Know then, Madam, that Don Antonio fell in Love with a Lady at Seville, one very handsome and well descended, in a word, wanting nothing but a Fortune suitable to her Quality: He Courted her so earnestly, that she, finding her self obliged by so great Demonstrations of Affection, Letters, and continual Embassies, attended with Presents, from Don Antonio, satisfied his desires, upon a Promise that he would make her his Wife, whereof there are many Witnesses: But the Business was to be kept secret for a time; for Don Antonio's
Father.

Father was then alive, who, having received some Intelligence of that Love, endeavoured all he could to prevent Don Antonio's Marriage with Donna Marcellina de Loprezza; (so was the Lady called) the Continuance of his Visits to her, produced little Proofs, which were two Sons and a Daughter, who were at that time with the Mother. When Don Antonio's Father was removed out of the way, (which happened not long after) Donna Marcellina expected he should make good his Promise, and Marry her; but he, for some time, came not so much as to see her: What Inconveniences she was put to from the time of their Acquaintance she knows to her Sorrow, and I am not Ignorant thereof; for I lived near her, and went often to her House.

Being now convinced that he intended to leave her in the Lurch, she discovered the Business to two Cousin-Germans of hers, who were so enraged thereat, that they immediately resolved to oblige Don Antonio, by force, to perform the Promise he had made to their Kinswoman. Don Antonio went to a certain Farm he had, not far from Seville, to avoid his Adversaries, who, knowing he went out of the way purposely because he would not satisfy their Cousin, resolved to be the Death of him: Things were in this Posture when my Father brought me to Madrid, where I have been about

about this six Weeks : This is the Account I can give you of Don Antonio, who must not think himself secure in this Court : For the Lady's Kinsmen, whom I know to be Gallant and stout Persons, as soon as they hear of his being here, will be sure to attend his Motions, and Revenge the Affront done to their Cousin ; nay, it will be easier for them to do it here than at Seville.

Donna Catharina heard very attentively the Story told her by the Duenna, and was extremely troubled, to find Don Antonio so far engaged with another. She asked her a thousand Questions, and among others, whether he was much in Love with that Mistress, whether that Donna Marcelina was very handsome ? &c. Whereto she made such Answers as were suitable to her Design, which was to put Don Antonio clearly out of her Favour. Donna Catharina resolved to give her Father an Account of all, and leave it to him to inform himself more fully of the Business. She immediately went to the Room where he was, to speak to him ; for all things were concluded as to the Marriage.

In the mean time Donna Olivia was left in the Outer Room, where the Women and Duenna's are wont to wait : There came in to them a Servant of Don Antonio's, whom

whom he had sent to the Post for Letters from *Seville* ; enquiring for his Master to give him the Pacquet. *Don Olivia* told him, that he was within, but that as soon as he came out, she would deliver it to him. Having opened the Pacquet, she put into it a Letter which she immediately Writ, and Sealing it up again, came where her Mistress was : She asked her whether she was going with those Letters ? The other answered without the least discovery of any Malice, that they were directed to *Seignior Don Antonio*, and had been brought thither a little before, by one of his Servants from the *Seville* Post. Curiosity was an Ingredient of the first Woman, and it is very fruitfully spread thro' the whole Sex. *Donna Catharina* shewed her self not free from it on this Occasion, and she was the more excusable ; considering the Story that had been told her by the subtil *Duenna* : So that she was tempted to open the Pacquet, wherein finding one Letter Written with a Woman's Hand, (which was that, Written by *Donna Olivia*) she could do no less than open it, and directing her Eye down to the bottom of it found it subscribed by one *Donna Marcellina de Loprezza* : She read it, and was confirmed in what before she not fully Credited. The

The Letter.

My Dearest,

YOUR Absence and my Indisposition have reduced me to such an Extremity, that I cannot imagine I have any long time to live ; it being impossible I should hold out, after the News I have heard of your Resolution to be Married at Madrid ; which cannot easily be done, without a transcendent Baseness by a Person so nearly engaged to me as you are. You know that you cannot bestow on another what is so Lawfully due to me ; especially if you make the least Reflection on the precious Pledges there are between us thereof. I have no other Advice to give you, as things now stand, but that, if you are at such a loss of all Shame and Conscience ; there is a Deity, who sees our most secret Thoughts, and passes a just Judgment on them ; and that I have many Noble Friends who measuring the small Account you make of them by your slighting of me, will not fail to Revenge the Affront done to us all. I hope we shall not be forced to those Extremities considering how highly you are obliged to do things suitable to the Nobleness of your Birth, and to acknowledge,

ledge, as you ought, her whom, while we both
Live, you must look on, as

Your Lawfull Wife,

Donna Marcellina de Loprezza,

This Letter fully satisfied *Donna Catharina*, that all she had heard from the malicious *Duenna* was true. Her Father coming into the Room as she had done reading it, she acquainted him with all that concerned *Don Antonio*, shewing him the Letter from *Donna Marcellina*: He was extremely astonished, to find that a Cavalier of so Noble a Family, had abused a Lady of such Quality, and that having Children by her, he should be so Impudent, as to make his Addresses to his Daughter: He forbore reproaching him therewith, 'till he had better informed himself from a Friend of his of *Seville*, then at *Madrid*, whom he immediately went to look for.

Don Alonzo was hardly got out of Doors, but *Don Antonio* and his Man came in, for his Man having told him that he had delivered the Pacquet to one of *Donna Catharina's* Women, he was come to receive it from her; since it was not brought to his Cousin's, whither all his Letters were directed.

directed. It was his Fortune to meet with Donna Catharina in the Outer Room, where her Father had left her. *I should not have returned so soon, my dearest Lady, (said he to her) had not somewhat extraordinary obliged me thereto ; it is to receive some Letters, which my Man tells me he delivered to one of your Women. She thought (says Donna Catharina) that you had been still with my Father : I casually meeting her as she was coming into the Room, asked her what she came for ; she answering, it was to deliver you the Pacquet, I took it from her and (presuming that a Cavalier of your Age and Complexion could not have lived to this time in Seville, and not have an Inclination for some Lady) a certain Conjunction of Curiosity and Jealousy perswaded me to open it. That Curiosity has done me a Courtesie, and has satisfied me in some things which before I only suspected : And therefore I forbear desiring your Excuse, since I have received so good an Information, before I was any further engaged with you ; for had it come too late, I had been ruined : Here's a Letter from a Person you should be well acquainted with : This would have been enough to undeceive me, but it only confirms a Relation I had received before ; upon which I was almost resolved to put such a Check to your Pretensions to me, as that you should have*
but

but little Encouragement to continue them: Farewell, my Presence will but trouble you, this Letter will acquaint you with what you are not Ignorant of.

Don Antonio receiving the Letter out of her Hand, was not a little surprized, not imagining what might have happened to him. He read it, and presently inferred, That it was a Trick put upon him by some envious Person, who was desirous to obstruct his Happiness. Meeting with Donna Olivia, (whom, as we said before, he knew not in her Widow's Habit) *Ah Madam!* (said he to her) *What Forgeries are these? I a Mistress at Seville, and of this Name? I Children by her, and that upon a Promise of Marriage? If it be not the greatest Untruth that ever Humane Malice invented, let me never look Man in the Face again. For my part, (replies the subtil Duenna) I find my self inclined to believe, what you say may be true; but your main Concernment is to bring my Lady to that Perswasion. I know her to be of such an Humour as not easily to quit a Resentment, which she entertains upon just Grounds; and I much Question, whether she will admit your Addresses any further, for I know she has acquainted her Father with all, and he is gone to a Gentleman of Seville, an intimate Friend of his,*
who

who is now in this City. I am very glad of it, (says Don Antonio) for he will find it to be an absolute Imposture, and that there is not any Lady in Seville, that goes under the Name of Donna Marcellina de Loprezza.

But I beseech you tell me, Madam, whether your Intimacy be very great with the Lady Donna Catharina. So great (replied she) that I am the only Person in her Favour, and to whom she is pleased to communicate her Thoughts. If it be so, (says Don Antonio) it's possible you may procure me the Favour from her, that I may vindicate my self. I much Question, whether she will ever speak to you again, (said she) for she is extremely incensed against you, and when once angry, if justly, she is the hardest to be appeased that ever I knew: But, (said he) if you are so much in her Favour, you may prevail somewhat with her, by representing to her the extraordinary Affection I have for her. It is in my Power, (said she) to do with her what you desire; but what will you give me if I can procure you a favourable Audience from her? Any thing you can desire, (said he to her) if you mind only matter of Advantage. You see I am very Young, (said she) and consequently may hope to be Married again, Money is the only principal Verb, which I have occasion for:

Q

If

If I answer your Expectation, may I rely on your Liberality for my Reward. That you may know how earnestly I desire it, (says he) do what I require, and I will make your Fortune heavier by Five Hundred Crowns than it is. I most humbly thank you, (replies she) but I must tell you, Sir, that I have been so deluded by the Verbal Promises sometimes made me by a Person of your Quality; that I have Reason to mistrust whatever is promised, if I have it not in Writing: You will be pleased to Excuse me, Sir, if my Fear to be deceived as I have been, force me to these Precautions, and to assure your self, that those satisfied, I will endeavour to serve you to the utmost of my Power. To give you absolute Satisfaction, as to that Point, Madam, (said he) help me to Pen, Ink, and Paper, and you shall have what Security you desire your self.

Donna Olivia would see the Issue of it, and so brought him what he desired. Don Antonio kept his Word with her; nay, either out of Ignorance, of the Form of such Obligations, or to make a greater Expression of his Earnestness that she should assist him, he proved so Liberal, as to give her a Blank Signed and Sealed, not mentioning the Sum whereto he obliged himself; telling her he had not specified it, out of

a Design to requite her beyond his Promises, proportionably to the Service she should do him, in the Recovery of his Mistress's Favour. She saw this happened according to her Wishes, so that acknowledging the Favour *Don Antonio* had done her, she promised him her utmost Endeavours to deserve it, by recovering him into the Favour of his Mistress. The Amorous Cavalier believed her, and took his leave.

Dilario coming in soon after, *Olivia* gave him an Account of what Progress she had made, and putting into his Hands the Blank Signed by *Don Antonio*, bid him write above his Name, a formal Promise of Marriage, dating it about the Time of his being at her Country-House near *Toledo*, with two Witnesses: Which *Dilario* did imitating as near as he could *Don Antonio's* Hand.

That Day, *Don Alonzo* failed to meet the Gentleman of *Seville*, and put off the Visit he intended him 'till the next. In the mean time, *Donna Olivia* understood from *Donna Catharina*, that she was resolved to lead Apes in Hell, rather than have *Don Antonio* to her Husband, having already trusted her *Duenna* with some of her

Secrets, she thought she might make an absolute Discovery of her self to her, and thereupon told her, how that before her Father had treated of a Marriage between her and *Don Antonio*, she had been Courted by a Person of Honour, named *Don Valerio de Merdea*, that she had some Inclination towards him ; and that the Perswasions of her Father, had prevailed with her to entertain the Applications of *Don Antonio* ; but having discovered his Unworthiness, she was resolved to Re-address her Affection to *Don Valerio*.

Donna Olivia was almost out of her self for Joy to hear that News, for it put her into a Confidence, that her Design would take ; and the more to promote it, she disposed *Donna Catharina* as much as lay in her Power to Favour *Don Valerio*. *He must needs be displeased with me, (says she to her) yet I doubt not but a Letter from me will Re-engage him to be my humble Servant.* The crafty *Duenna*, proffered to be the Bearer of it, on Condition she might do it by Coach. *Donna Catharina* was very glad to find her Woman so ready to serve her, especially in a Business which she was so much pleased with ; and so she commanded a Coach to be made ready, and
t hat

that she should go immediately to see *Don Valerio*, to whom she writ a Letter. *Donna Olivia* took Coach, pretending to go to *Don Valerio's* House, but she went to her own, and bid the Coach-man return to *Donna Catharina*, and tell her, that for fear Notice might be taken of the Coach, she would go a Foot to the Place where she had sent her, conducted by *Granatus* her pretended Father. From that House, she writ two Letters, one, to *Don Alonzo*, desiring him to come to her; the other, to *Don Valerio*, to the same Effect, with Directions to find the House.

While the Letters were carried abroad, she put off her Widow's Habit, and put on that of a Person of the highest Quality, expecting these two Visits with the accustomed Ceremonies of *Spain*. *Don Valerio de Merdea* was not long a coming, though he knew nothing of the Person who had Written to him. There had not passed many Compliments between him and *Donna Olivia*, but Word was brought her that *Don Alonzo de Castiza* was alighted out of Coach, and was a coming into the House.

Sir, (said she to *Don Valerio*) *I am obliged to speak with the Person who is coming up, all alone.*

alone. Not but that you may hear the Discourse we shall have together; and therefore let me entreat you to stand behind this Curtain, whence you will hear all we say; for it Concerns you more than you imagine, and will prove to your Advantage. Don Valerio comply'd, not knowing what might be the Issue of this Precaution.

Don Alonzo came in, and having taken a Seat, Donna Olivia (whom he knew not as she was then dress'd) apply'd her self to him with this Discourse. I doubt not, Sir, but you somewhat wonder, you should be intreated hither by a Letter, and that from a Person not known to you. To recover you from that Confusion, I will give you an Account of my self. " I was Born in the Imperial City of Toledo, the only Daughter " of the House from which I am descended, " and Heir thereof. I am of the Family " of Priola, so well known all over Spain, " that I need say nothing of it. As to my " Quality, I am to tell you farther, that " my Father was, in his time, honoured " with the Order of St. James, and my " Brother of that of Alcantara, with the " Command of a Troop of Horse under " his Majesty in Flanders. Upon his " Death I retir'd to a Country-House I " have

" have near *Toledo*, where I liv'd private-
 " ly, contenting my self with the Inno-
 " cent Enjoyments of a Country-Life,
 " without the least Acquaintance of any
 " thing of Love, till that, one Morning
 " a Sheperd of mine brought to my House,
 " two Men, who had been robb'd, and
 " stripped the Night before, by certain
 " High-way-Men. I took Compassion of
 " them, especially him who by his De-
 " meanour seem'd to be the Master, and
 " out of two Chests of Cloths my Brother
 " had left, I furnish'd them with two
 " Suits, wherewith they cover'd their
 " Nakedness. They seem'd to be very
 " thankful for so seasonable a Favour;
 " but the more considerable of the
 " two has treated me very ungrateful-
 " ly, and requited my Charitable
 " Offices only with Flatteries and De-
 " ceit.

" I was so Simple as to be cajol'd, by
 " the Caresses he made me, during four
 " Days that I kept him at my House, and
 " he prevail'd so far with me, that I was
 " no longer at my own Disposol. The
 " re-iterated Oaths and Protestations of
 " a Person of that Worth, rais'd me into
 " a Perswasion that he really lov'd me, and

“ that induc’d me to love him again. To
 “ be short, upon a Promise he made me
 “ of Marriage, he got me in a Humour to
 “ grant him the greatest of Favours. He
 “ made me believe that his going to Court
 “ was for the Prosecution of some Law-
 “ Business that concern’d him very high-
 “ ly. He desir’d my leave to go to *Ma-*
 “ *drid*, Promising to Return again in a
 “ short time, but with such Demonstra-
 “ tions of Love as might easily have pre-
 “ vailed with one who had not fancied
 “ him so Affectionately as I had done. I
 “ supply’d him with all things necessary,
 “ and he left me extremely troubled at
 “ his Departure. Now, by a Picture and
 “ a Letter he left behind him under the
 “ Bolster, I found that the Occasion of
 “ his coming to this Court was in Order
 “ to a Marriage between him, and that
 “ Miracle of Beauty *Donna Catharina*, your
 “ Daughter. Now, our Honour being
 “ the most considerable thing we ought
 “ to be tender of, I could do no less, upon
 “ the Procedure of *Don Antonio*, than
 “ resolve to come to this Court and to
 “ apply my self to my Friends, that by
 “ their Favour, I might cross the Mar-
 “ riage he is about, and you will find,
 “ that

“ that I may easily do it, if you but see
 “ what Cards I have to Play.

“ I conceiv’d my first Overture should
 “ be to acquaint you with my Disgrace,
 “ with the Dishonour I have run into by the
 “ Acquaintance of *Don Antonio*, and with
 “ his Treachery towards me, that receiving
 “ it from my own Mouth, you may not
 “ be too forward to conclude what is al-
 “ ready resolved between you, as I have
 “ understood. With the Paper I have
 “ here in my Hand, I will Prosecute him
 “ to the utmost ; it is under his own
 “ Hand and Seal, and Witnesses to it :
 “ Be pleased, Sir, to peruse it, and see
 “ whether I have not Reason to Prose-
 “ cute this Ungrateful and Perjur’d Man,
 “ and to force him to a Performance of the
 “ Promise he has made me.

Don Alonzo was astonished at this Rela-
 tion of *Donna Olivia*, and by what was
 put into his Hands, found out the Disposi-
 tion of *Don Antonio*, and concluded him
 a fickle imprudent Person, who pursu’d
 his Enjoyments, without any Thought of
 the Consequences thereof, and thereupon
 he resolv’d there should be no farther talk
 of any Marriage between him and his
 Daughter. Opening the Paper which

Q 5

Donna

Donna Olivia had given him, he found in it these Words.

THis present Writing, written with my own Hand, and Sealed with my Seal, Witnesseth, That I, *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, an Inhabitant of *Sevil*, acknowledge myself to be the Lawful Husband of *Donna Olivia de Priola*, an Inhabitant of *Toledo*, and that I will perform the present Promise I make her of Marriage whensoever I shall be by her, thereto required. Signed and Sealed in the Presence of *Dilario* and *Flora*, Servants to the said *Donna Olivia*.

Don Antonio de Mendoza.

Having read this Promise, and knowing the Hand and Seal of *Don Antonio*, *Don Alonzo* said to her, *Madam*, I am very much troubled, that *Don Antonio*, (a Person so well descended as he is) should be guilty of so unworthy an Action, and a Demeanour so full of Treachery; for at the time when he gave you this Writing, he was coming hither purposely to be Married to my Daughter. But the Account you have given me of him is such, that I assure you, I will have no more to do with him, since you have so much Reason to oppose

oppose it. Prosecute your own Right, and leave him not till you have obtained your Desires, and be assured I shall assist you to the utmost of my Power, since I find your Honour so highly concerned in it. I have some Friends here, and those Powerful, I will engage them all to serve you, that you may find I am a Person, who prefer a just Cause before all Self-Interest.

Donna Olivia gave him very humble Thanks for so great a Favour, and the Tears that fell from her at the close of her Discourse, heightened his Zeal and Tenderness towards her. Don Alonzo took along with him the Writing which Donna Olivia had shewn him, that he might thereby induce Don Antonio to an Acknowledgement of his Fault. With those Protestations he took leave of Donna Olivia, Promising to see her again within a short time, and to Return the Promise of Marriage; reiterating the Desires he had to serve her. He thereupon left her, giving Don Valerio the Liberty to come upon the Stage. As soon as he had taken his Seat: You have understood, (says Donna Olivia to him) if so be you have heard the Discourse between Don Alonzo and my self, what has passed between me and Don Antonio. Upon which

which Account, (as you have heard from her Father) you find he is never like to be Husband to the fair Donna Catharina. She sent me hither to acquaint you, that what has been done on her Part in order to the Marriage between her and Don Antonio was purely out of Compliance with the Commands of her Father, and that she is glad of the Occasion she now has to quit him, and re-assume that Kindness and Affection she ever had for you. What I say, you will find in Writing under her Hand, when you have perused this Letter. Don Valerio having read it, was the most satisfied Man in the World, to find his blasted Hopes now beginning to spring again.

Donna Olivia perceiving it, to confirm his Satisfaction, continu'd her Discourse to him thus: I know Seignior Don Valerio, you will be astonished in your Self, how this Letter should fall into my Hands, it is my self only can unriddle it. Being in Love, as you are, you know that, that little Divinity is the Author of many Disguises and Transformation, as you are taught by Ovid in his Metamorphosis, and consequently you doubt not, but that I Loving an Unconstant Person who had had such precious Pledges of my Affection, should leave nothing unattempted to recover my Honour, and oblige him to the Satisfaction
of

of what he owes me. I came to this Court, with a Design, being what I am, to get into the Service of Donna Catharina, and have effected it. For though you see me in this House, (which was taken upon my Account) I live in her's, waiting on her in the Quality of a Duenna; a part I have assumed, the better to elude Don Antonio, and to do all that lay in my Power to put him out of my Mistress's Favour; and I have also brought that so far about, that I am Confident there will never be any Marriage between them, and she is wholly inclined to Favour you. Now consider with your self, what you would have me to say to your Mistress for I am just going to put on my Widow's Habit, and I must return presently, and am afraid she will think I have stay'd too long. If you will return her an Answer, you have here all things requisite to do it. I think it necessary you should, that Donna Catharina may see, I have punctually obeyed her Commands. As to the Secret of my Disguise, I pray keep it such, for it concerns me, that it should not be discover'd a while. I rely on your Discretion, and knowing you to be a Person of Honour and Worth, I presume you will not discover it.

This

This Discourse very much surpriz'd *Don Valerio*, who took occasion to commend her Courage and Generosity, and return'd her his most humble thanks, for the Favour she had done him, in enstrusting him with the Secret of her Love, and pray'd Heaven to give him Life to Acknowledge and Requite so great an Obligation. He Promis'd her not to discover any thing till she commanded him to do it; and thereupon, seeing her in haste to be gone, he Writ a Letter in Answer to what he had receiv'd from his Mistress, full of Amorous Compliments, and Protestations of Fidelity to the last Gasps. While he was Writing, *Donna Olivia* put on her Widow's Habit, and made all the haste she could to *Don Alonzo's*.

In the mean time *Don Antonio*, extremely resenting the Imposture put upon him, acquainted his Cousin, *Don Martinio* with it, whereupon they went both together to *Don Alonzo's*. He not being within, they ask'd for *Donna Catharina*, who came out without any Ceremony to receive their Visit, that it might be the shorter; for she had no great Mind to see *Don Antonio*. The poor Gentleman endeavour'd to vindicate

dicate himself, swearing a thousand Oaths that he never heard of any Lady in *Sevil*, of the name mentioned in the Letter, and that no doubt some envious Person had put this Trick upon him; and that if *Don Alonzo* should upon Enquiry find it to be true, he would be content to lose his Honour and Life, nay more, the Hopes of ever enjoying her.

The earnestness of his Discourse put *Donna Catharina* into some Doubt, that what she had heard was some Imposture advanced purposely to obstruct his Pretensions, and referr'd it to her Father, to make a full Discovery thereof. Her answer to them was, that she was not at her own Disposal, that it was her Duty to comply with that of her Father, and consequently, she could not quit the ill Impression she had received of *Don Antonio*, till she were better inform'd of the Truth; that her Father would come in ere long, and she could take no Resolution without his Orders, in a Business of so great Importance.

While they were engaged in this Discourse, *Don Alonzo* comes in from the Visit he had made to *Donna Olivia*. *Don Martinio* made him a short Relation of what

what had happen'd, and renew'd to him the just Complaint which his Cousin had reason to make of the Crime laid to his Charge. Whereupon both desiring him to hold his Hand; at least till there were an Exact enquiry made into the Business, he desir'd them to sit down, and gave them this Answer. *Gentlemen, I went out in hopes to be informed by some Friends of Sevil, now here, whether that which is imputed to Don Antonio were true, and I could not meet with them; but if I had found them, it's possible they might know nothing of the Business, for Sevil is a great City, and some Parts of it lie at such a distance from others, that they may well be accounted different Places. What I found most certain is, that Don Antonio has made a Promise of Marriage to a Lady of Toledo, who entertain'd him at a Country-House of hers, after he had been Robbed by certain Thieves; and what is yet more to be considered, she thought it not much to secure his Affection by the Forfeiture of her Honour. I have it from the Lady her self, who sent for me, and shew'd me the Promise under his Hand, which since we all know, there can be no Evasion.*

He

He thereupon shew'd it both the Cousins, who were both at such a loss that they knew not what to say ; especially *Don Antonio*, who sufficiently betray'd his Guilt by his Astonishment, but swore withal that he had not made that Promise under his own Name, but under a feigned. But *Don Martinio* knowing all the Circumstances of the Business, was most liberal of his Reproaches to his Cousin ; which raising a certain Compassion in *Don Alonzo*, forc'd this Discourse from him.

Seignior *Don Antonio*, we find by many Experiences, that a Young man, once fallen in Love, will do any thing to obtain his Desires ; that Love should overcome you I wonder not at all ; but what occasions my Astonishment, is, that you should have the Confidence to Address your self to a Person of the Quality, this Lady is of, and dishonour her, without ever considering, that in time, she might acquaint her Friends therewith, who would be sure to Revenge the Affront ; and what adds to this Astonishment, is, that you durst do such an Action when you were coming hither purposely in order to your Matching with my Daughter, for whom, if any Credit may be given to your Letters, you pretended to have a passionate Affection. I see not how your Heart could
be

be capable of such a Competition of Passions, that you should pretend the greatest Inclinations imaginable for one, and treat of a Marriage with another: Being a Person of Honour, I doubt not but you will make it appear in your Actions; and that is, that you stand to the Promise you made to the Lady Olivia, though it were only out of this Consideration, That it argues a more generous Nature to do that willingly, which must otherwise unwillingly be done. The Lady is not so destitute of Friends, as you perhaps imagine; she is now at Madrid, come expressly to recover her Debt, which no doubt she will; and her Cause being so Just, 'tis not likely she will want Assistance. My Advice is, that you endeavour to prevent the ill Reports which the Business must raise of you; Perform what you have Promis'd, and let not your Love to my Daughter blind you any further, for I am resolv'd to shut her up in a Cloyster, for the remainder of her Life, rather than she shall ever be your Wife.

With that he rose up, and without any Compliments, went into another Room. Donna Catharina follow'd him, and the two Cousins, without so much as a Word exchanged, went home, where Don Martinio fell into bitter Expostulations with his Cousin, for his engaging himself in so unworthy

unworthy an Action. *Don Antonio* had nothing to reply, but that he was astonished how that Promise came to be Signed with his own Name ; having made it only in a suppositious.

Leaving them in that Confusion, making several Reflections on the Adventure, let us return to the feigned Waiting-woman, who was got back to *Don Alonzo's*, and had deliver'd *Don Valerio's* Letter to *Donna Catharina*. She was infinitely satisfied with it, as fearing he would not have been so easily retrieved into her Service.

Donna Catharina acquainted her, how that *Don Antonio* and his Cousin had been there ; what had pass'd between them and her Father ; and that he had absolutely dismissed them ; it being discovered, that *Don Antonio* had committed another Impertinence, and had made a Promise of Marriage to a Lady of *Toledo*, who was come express to *Madrid*, to obstruct his Pretensions to her. *Donna Olivia* pretended the greatest Astonishment in the World, and burst forth into Imprecations against *Don Antonio*.

In

In the mean time there came a Message to *Donna Catharina* from a She-Cousin of hers, inviting her to a Comedy, which was to be represented at her House, that Night, whereto she sent Answer that she would come. *Donna Olivia* having made so Successful a progress in her Business, bethought her self of an Invention that should bring it to an absolute Period; for she had the Management of all. She told *Donna Catharina*, that if she pleas'd to wave her going to the Comedy, she might have a Meeting that Night with *Don Valerio* in a secure Place, to wit at her Father's House where she might do what she pleas'd her self. The Lady had a great Kindness for *Don Valerio*, and was desirous to prevent the Reproaches he might make upon her former discarding of him, and so she accepted the Proffer made by her Woman. She immediately sent for *Granatus*, and gave him a Letter for *Don Valerio*, whereby he was desired to come that Night at Eight to *Donna Olivia's* House. He was sent with another to *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, acquainting him, That *Donna Catharina*, notwithstanding the Indignation of her Father, and what she her self had said, was resolved secretly to Marry him,
and

and desir'd to meet him that Night, at a House whither the Bearer would bring him, and that he should not fail to be there at Nine.

The two Cavaliers kindly receiv'd their Letters, especially *Don Antonio*, who being but a little before dismissed, was recall'd to joyn Hands with *Donna Catharina*, and imagined it done by the intercession of the Waiting-Gentlewoman, to whom he thought himself infinitely obliged, and the Present he had made her well bestow'd: The two Gallants fail'd not to be there at the time appointed, and in the mean while, *Donna Catharina* and her Woman took Coach leaving *Don Alonzo* at home, ready to go to Bed. They went to *Donna Olivia's* House, which seem'd to be that of *Granatus*, where they were received by *Flora*, *Olivia's* Maid, who went under the Name of her Step-mother: While *Donna Catharina* was expecting the Arrival of *Don Valerio*, she sent *Dilario* with a Letter to *Don Alonzo* containing these Words.

To

To Don Alonzo de Castiza.

S I R,

M^R Lady Donna Catharina, instead of going to see the Comedy, whereto she had been invited, is come to my Father's House, with a Resolution to be secretly Married to Don Antonio, notwithstanding your prohibition to the contrary: I conceiv'd it my Duty to give you notice thereof, and it is your Work to take what Course you think fit to prevent it: For my Part I have done what lay in me, and I shall not need to fear any Reproach from you, since I have sent you timely Notice of her Intentions.

Donna Artimiza.

Granatus was dispatched away with this Letter, and order'd not to deliver it till half an Hour after Nine, which he did. In the mean time *Don Valerio* fail'd not to come, precisely at his time, and was directed to his Mistress, who gave him such Satisfaction as silenc'd all his Complaints.

Olivia left them together in a Room, where she lock'd them in: Not long after came

came *Don Antonio*, according to the time appointed him, and was receiv'd by *Olivia*, who dispos'd him into a Room, without light, alledging it concern'd him, that he were not seen; that he should forbear making any Noise, and that it would not be long ere his Mistress came to him: He promis'd to obey her in all things, and staid there so long as that *Olivia* might shift her self into Cloths suitable to her Quality, that done, she went into the Room, and speaking very low, it was no hard matter for her to deceive *Don Antonio*, and to make him believe he was very much in his Mistress's Favour.

Leaving these young People thus matched, let us return to *Don Alonzo*, who receiv'd the Letter from the *Duenna* just as he was getting into Bed. The Old Gentleman was extremely surprized thereat, and going out of Doors, attended by *Dilario*, he went to the Commissary's House, which was hard by: The Afflicted Man acquainted him what Posture things were in; whereupon the Commissary taking some of his People about him, they went to *Dilario's* House, where, after some knocking, they were let in: They had luckily a Lantern with them, and it did
 them

them good Service, for they found the House without any Light: They lighted a Torch, and went into several Rooms, in one whereof finding *Don Valerio* and *Donna Catharina*, the Commissary ask'd them, what they did there? *Don Valerio* told him he was there with his Wife, which was confirmed by *Donna Catharina*. *Don Alonzo* would have run him through; but the Commissary telling him she was not with the Person he imagin'd, that that Gentleman was *Don Valerio de Merdea*, a Person of great Quality, and well known about the Court. *Don Alonzo* could do no less than approve of their Marriage, though 'twere only out of a Satisfaction, that she was not fallen into the Hands of *Don Antonio*; whom he hated extremely, for the strange Pranks he had Played.

They went thence unto another Room, which they found lock'd, and thereupon threatening to break open the Door; *Don Antonio* open'd it within, and comes out telling them that he was there with *Donna Catharina* his Wife, and that it was with her Consent, he was come into that House to Marry her. Upon that Discourse *Donna Olivia* came out of the Room, and said to him, *You are deceived, sweet Seignior*
Don

Don Antonio, *I am not the Woman you think me, but Donna Olivia de Priola, who expects from you the Reparation of her Honour; the Recovery whereof oblig'd me to enter into the Service of Donna Catharina, serving her in the Quality of a Waiting-woman.* Don Alonzo de Castiza looking on her a little more attentively than he had done, knew her, as also did the fair Lady *Donna Catharina*: Both of them reflecting on the Disguises she had run through to retrieve her Honour, very seriously commended her Courage and Contrivances, and as much blamd' *Don Antonio*, who finding himself Convinced, and Condemned of all, ratify'd once more the Promise he had made her.

Don Valerio and his Mistress were ensur'd one to the other, and the Solemnity of their Marriage order'd to be Eight Days after. They prov'd both very happy in their Wives, of whom they had many Children who were the Comfort and Felicity of their Parents. But particularly for *Don Antonio*, when he reflected on the strange Adventures whereby *Donna Olivia* engag'd him to his Duty, he look'd on all as so many Extraordinary Demonstrations of her Affection towards him, which occasion'd his to be multiplyed towards her;

R

besides

besides the Kindness he had for her upon the Account of her Ingenuity: For Wit in a Woman is a great inflamer of Love, especially that Woman's Wit which is ever best at a dead Lift.

This Novel of *Don Jaime's* was wonderfully liked by *Rufina* and her Maids. That natural Eloquence of his, joyned to his other good Qualities, fully compleated the Conquest of *Rufina's* Heart; and the Spark found he had charmed her to the last degree. He quite laid aside the design he had formed of Robbing her; nay, he now desired a convenient opportunity of making the same known to her, and it was not long before he found one, for as *Rufina* thought *Don Jaime* was really what he had told her, she gave him to understand that her intention was to leave *Toledo*, before her Father returned from *Madrid*, to carry with her the most valuable part of her Effects, and to retire with him to *Valencia*, since he was so powerful in that Country, and descended from so Illustrious a Family. The disguised Cavalier upon this occasion was forced to own the stratagem he had form'd against her; and being unwilling she shou'd
be

be any longer under her Mistake he said to her : My dear Soul, knowing the good Will wherewith you have been pleased to honour me, I will no longer conceal any thing from you ; I will lay open my whole Heart before you, and inform you of what you are at present ignorant ; neither wou'd my Crime admit of any Excuse, if the Love I now bear you did not make some amends for it. My Love is not the Crime I speak of ; for all that see your divine Beauty must inevitably love you : I beheld it, and conquered by your Charms gave up my Liberty and all the other Powers of my Soul, to those of your enchanting Face. And 'tis no wonder I did so ; for this is a Victory, Madam, which you may easily gain over Hearts much more flinty than mine, which thinks it self blest in being your slave, and in continuing so as long as ever my Eyes can admire the Brightness of those two Suns. This Preamble is only to implore your Pardon for the Fault I have committed ; I frankly confess I am not the Man I made you believe I was by the Relation you obliged me to give you of my Descent ; though I am indeed of *Valencia*, but of mean parentage though vir-

tuous. My Father lived Honestly upon the Labour of his Hands, being by Trade a Rope-maker : I had too high a Spirit for one of my Condition : being resolved not to stoop to my Father's mechanick Business, I came into *Castile*, after having been first in *Andalusia* : and have been so successful in what I turned my self to, that I have never wanted either Friends or Money.

I came hither in the Company of a Man call'd *Crispin* who was a Prisoner for some time at *Malaga*, upon account of some Crime which he wou'd never own to me. This Man heapt upon me several Obligations, defraying my Expences upon the Road, and even lending me Money, because he saw the desire I had to contract a Friendship with him, that we might assist each other in the Profession we both followed. One day he unbosom'd himself to me, and beg'd me to contrive some way to introduce my self into your House, for he knew you had a great deal of Money by you, and intended to ease you of as much of it as he cou'd : What he said to me thereupon made me conceive that he had been a Prisoner at *Malaga* for Theft. To effect our design, therefore, we pretended to have

have a Quarrel in the Street, that might force me to fly to your House for Refuge ; where you have received me so obligingly, and loaded me with so many Favours, that I find your Charms will frustrate *Crispin's* Hopes, for as I have now inform'd you of the Villany we had prepared for you, so I shall endeavour to turn it upon his own head, by chousing him out of what Treasure he is Master of: For I am not capable of being ungrateful to a Person that has obliged me so highly as you have. I have discovered every thing to you ; now dispose of me how you please. I will never suffer any Injury to be done you, though my Quality, as I have confess'd to you, is not what I boasted it to be.

Rufina was mightily astonished at *Crispin's* Stratagem ; and not a little glad she had escaped the effects of it: But she was afraid *Crispin* had likewise told *Faime* who she was and what Trade she got her livelihood by. Seeing therefore he had so ingenuously declared himself to her without concealing even the Meanness of his Birth ; she thought her self obliged to do the same, by confessing to him her true Origin, the Course of her Life and that

of her Parents, and in short all that had happened to her till her Arrival at *Toledo*. Love and Wine often fetch out things that are not absolutely necessary to be known. *Faime* was over-joyed to find that *Rufina* was of no better Extraction than himself; this Equality of Condition bound them the closer to each other, and made them now fully resolve upon Marrying. They also resolved to leave *Toledo* and go fix at *Madrid*: But *Rufina* said she won'd be first revenged of *Crispin*, against whom she was justly provoked, upon account of the Trick he meant to put upon her. *Faime* desired her to leave that to him; because by means of their Intimacy he might easily draw him into his Net; and not only strip him of his Money, but secure themselves from his future Resentment by throwing him into *Toledo* Gaol.

In this Resolution he went to see *Crispin*, whom he found at his Lodging, not expecting a Visit so soon: He was mighty glad to hear his Comrade had made such advances in *Rufina*'s Affections; but then *Faime* told him, he shou'd want more Money both to defray his Expences, and to make sure of the Servants: This he thought

thought wou'd hinder *Crispin* from suspecting any thing of his design, and as he did not spare for Protestations of inviolable Friendship, by this means that old subtle Thief was Noosed in spite of all his Cunning; for to enable *Faime* to appear to *Rufina* with Magnificence, he gave him a hundred Crowns of Gold, to spend as he pleased, in hopes of getting six times as much by the Bargain. He took them out of a Bag wherein were above five hundred Pistoles, all good Plunder. *Faime* took particular notice of the place where he hid that Treasure, and like a knight Errant of old made a Solemn Vow never to sleep in a soft Bed till he had made himself the Guardian of those bewitching pieces. *Crispin* soon afterwards went down to give Orders for dressing a brace of Partridges and a Rabbit to entertain his Comrade, and in the mean while his Comrade laid hold of a Trunk where the Money was put, and picking the Lock at which employment he was very expert, he took out the Bag, which contained that precious Depositum. They sup'd together very Merrily, and *Faime* took his leave of *Crispin*, giving him hopes of a speedy Accomplishment of their Design.

He was extreemly well received by *Rufina* when he came home: He told her what had past between him and *Crispin*, and how nobly he had paid him for his Intention of cheating her. Then showed her the Pistoles, which were very delightful in her Eyes, for she was a great Lover of that Species, as indeed she was of most sorts of your Gold Coinage. *Jaima* told her how much it concerned him to be gone quickly from *Toledo*, before *Crispin* shou'd perceive the loss of his Money: But *Rufina* found out a good Expedient for that, though she too was of her Gallant's Opinion as to leaving *Toledo*. She was resolved to make use again of the *Malaga* Business; giving notice to the Provost who was a great Persecutor of Rogues, that *Crispin* was at *Toledo*, and that he lodged at such a place. After having written a pretty long Letter to the Provost, they began to think in earnest of their Departure, and laid hold of the Opportunity of two Waggon's that were just then going to *Madrid*: In these they loaded all their Effects, and taking with them no Servants besides the Slave, they went to the Court, which is a Sea where many Streams meet. There they
resolved

resolved *Rufina* shou'd lye concealed till they had heard News of *Garay*, and whether he was yet gone from thence or no.

Let us leave them to provide themselves with Lodgings, and return to what happened upon the Letter which the Provost received. He had scarce read it over, but he call'd for the Serjeants, went immediately with them to *Crispin's* Lodgings (who was impatiently waiting till *Faime* shou'd give him Entrance into *Rufina's* House to put him in Possession of all her Cash) surpris'd him in his Chamber and carry'd him to Prison. Not long before, a Judge of *Malaga* had been at *Toledo* in quest of him, but not finding him, he left with the Provost the Marks he was to know him by, and by which, though the Dress he was then in disguised him very much, the Provost soon knew him to be the Man. He was carry'd to Prison, and all his things siezed on, among which he thought was the Gold which *Faime* had carry'd off, for he had not yet miss'd it. What follow'd after *Crispin's* Imprisonment was, that being mounted upon the terrible Wooden Courser, he shew'd himself a sorry Horseman, for he

cou'd conceal nothing : Whereupon he was conducted to the Gallows to see whether he cou'd caper in the Air better than he cou'd ride, which he did with great applause in the Presence of a vast number of Spectators. It was no small blessing to him, that he ended his days in that manner, whereby he had time to repent of the Sins of his Life ; for though this is indeed the common End of those that live by his wretched Profession, yet many of them die suddenly by Sword or Pistol without any such amendment. Thus died the Unfortunate *Crispin*, who while he was a Hermit had learnt enough of Preaching to make a handsome Oration at the Place of Execution. He knew very well that his Disaster had been brought upon him by *Faime* : But like a good Christian at his Death he forgave all.

Rufina and her Lover, dwelling in private at *Madrid* to avoid *Garay*, were now united by the Marriage Tye. *Garay* very soon afterwards went to *Alcala*, where he was told he might find his Wife ; but missing of her there too he fell into Company with some Gentlemen of his own Art, and by conversing but a very short time

time with them was so lucky as to be
 Condemned first to the Lash, and then
 for six years to the Galley. He was carry'd
 in Chains to *Toledo*; and as he
 thought *Rufina* still lived there, he writ
 her a Letter, wherein he alledged, that
 since by his assistance she had got all her
 Wealth, she ought now to have com-
 passion on him and save him from under-
 going this woful Sentence, by purchasing
 a Slave to serve in his stead, which is
 done daily. The Person that carry'd
 the Letter sought *Rufina* in the Street
 to which he was directed; but he was
 quickly informed by the Neighbours that
 she was gone from *Toledo*: So that, ho-
 nest *Garay*, laden with Irons, Years, and
 Labours, had the Honour of being his
 Majesty's Officer on board the Gallies,
 together with several others, who ne-
 ver had confidence enough in their own
 Merit to pretend to that Employ-
 ment.

Let us return to *Jaime*, who now
 lived very splendidly at *Madrid*: He
 had not been long there before he associ-
 ated himself with some Worthy Gentle-
 men like himself, all mightily given to
 take care of other Peoples Goods, and
 to

to Reap the Harvest before Harvest time: was come, being of Opinion that Gold and Jewels are ripe at any time. They committed some private Thefts, with so much Art and Industry, that the Authors were never suspected: Which so whetted their Appetites, that they were by no means Idle in looking out sharp for new Opportunity's of exercising their Talons.

There was at that time at *Madrid* an excellent Company of Comedians, the very best in all *Spain*, which the Liberality of a Grandee who was vastly Rich, had got together at his own Charge, and there wanted no Cost to make them compleat. 'Twas not known with what design he did it, whether to exercise his Charity, or to gratify his own Inclination, or for what other reason: But he was particularly solicitous to set them handsomely out, though his Pocket paid dear for it. He was very desirous they shou'd have the benefit of the Festival of the Holy Sacrament at which the Comedians of the Town every day during the Octave, represent Plays in the open Street, to which every Body is welcome Gratis, and this is done at *Madrid* every year upon that Feast.

To

To effect his design, he bought them new Plays of the best Poets in *Spain*, whom he rewarded very handsomely ; and who were obliged to work extreamly fast, for that great Company : So that another Company, which was also at *Madrid*, finding it self of no use, not being able to stand in competition with this, was forced to leave the City and go to *Toledo*, where that Imperial City paid them the usual Allowance for acting their best Pieces upon the same Festival. The new Company was now left wholly possess'd of the Court, and the Grandee before mentioned, gave them two thousand Crowns by way of advance, to buy them Cloaths that might be answerable to the Beauty of their Plays. This Money was deposited in the House of one of these Actors, who was a Man of Wit and Judgment, and in whom his Companions placed so much confidence that he was the sole Manager of every thing. He put the Money into a Coffer, the Key of which he always carry'd about him. *Faime's* Gang had advice of it immediately : And having no Aversion to so pretty a Sum of Money, they consulted upon ways and means to make themselves

themselves Masters of it ; and not hitting upon any that pleased them, they at last referr'd it wholly to *Faime*, of whose Skill they had seen instances upon several the like Occasions. He desired till the next day to think sedately of it ; and at Night, he retired apart with his Wife, to whom he communicated the Design, and the several projects of his Comrades. She, who was a sharper at these Businesses than any of them, told him an infallible way to compass their Wishes. He had the Reputation of being a Poet, and of composing Verses, so that between them they drew out the plan of a Stratagem, which was presently received and agreed to by the rest of the Society.

The next day they drest *Faime* like a Scholar just come from College, purchasing of the Brokers a Cassock and a long Cloak, which had been very much worn, and was finely embroidered with Grease. In this disguise he smelt as rank of the Poet as possible : The Cloak was of black Frize without Nap : They put upon his Nose a huge pair of Spectacles, which he fastened to his Ears with Lute-strings, as it is commonly practised in *Spain*, and provided

provided him a Hat with vast Rims: In short, he was furnished with every thing that he thought might be necessary to make him appear a ridiculous, extravagant Poet, which was the main part of their Plot.

Thus equip'd he went to the Players, who were met at the Place where they were used to act their Plays, in order now to rehearse one which was to be performed in three days. He addressed himself to the Manager of the whole Company, whose Name he had before learnt; and accosting him with abundance of Ceremony: *I am, Sir, said he, with your good leave and pleasure, a Poet.* This Player, who, as we said before, was an arch Wag, and had been used to such extravagant People as *Jaine* seemed now to be: *May you continue so, Sir, reply'd he, these many years; I assure you I shall never take the least offence at it.* The Design of my Studies was, said he, to make myself well-read in Theology, in order to the being a Dignitary as I am already a Batchelor in the University of *Iracho*, where I have lived with the general Applause of all my Countrymen; for I am a *Biscaineer* to serve God and your Illustrious

ous Company. The Place of my Nati-
 vity is *Ordugna*; and I have the Honour
 to be ally'd to the best Families in that
 ancient Town. My Name is the Bat-
 chelor *Dominic Joancha*, and I am very
 well known all over *Biscay*: Where,
 (not neglecting the Talent which Hea-
 ven has been pleased to give me gratis,
 in sending me into the World a Poet)
 I have apply'd my self to the study of
 Poetry, in which I have wonderful suc-
 cess: And finding that my Works were
 universally esteemed, and that every Bo-
 dy prest me to make them publick; I
 set to writing of Plays, not such as ap-
 pear now a-days, the composition of
 Apprentice Poets: I have several written
 in a Style that may truly be call'd extra-
 ordinary, and I cou'd let you have a
 Dozen that are quite finished. I came
 to this Court because there are several
 excellent Wits to be found here, and I
 have had the Honour to make my self
 known for what I am; and without va-
 nity be it spoken, I have forced the best
 Judges to confess that my Beauties are
 by no means common. But I am chiefly
 happy, Sir, in living at the same time
 with so perfect, so Illustrious a Company,
 which

which may be call'd the Cream of all the Companies in *Spain*, and in whose Service I mean to employ the Talent I am blest with, if you and your Companions think well thereof. I intend to let you have immediately half a dozen Plays at least, all written with this right Hand. As for the price, you are such *Reasonable* Gentlemen, that we shall soon be agreed : Be pleased, Sir, to do me the honour to make me known to the other Gentlemen, your Associates, that they too may tell me how they approve of my offers.

This Actor was of a different Temper from most of the Others, who so soon as a Poet that they are not acquainted with, comes to shew them a Play, despise and often refuse to hear him ; as if God, who gave Wit to those that are in vogue, had limited his favours, and cou'd bestow none upon any body else ; when he is able to give not only as much, but infinitely more to whomsoever he pleases. I return to my Story, to inform you that this Player was of a very Jovial Humour and took great delight, when he had little else to do, to divert himself upon such occasions.

casions. Judging of this Man by his Habit and Discourse, as any one else wou'd, he told him that he did them a great deal of honour, and that he returned him Thanks in the name of the Company. Then, turning to his Companions, This, Gentlemen, says he, is the Batchelor *Dominic Joanco*, a Noble *Biscayneer*, and a very excellent Poet, who writes admirably for the Stage, and who offers to use his Pen for Ours, having already twelve at least quite finished, which if you think fit, he will shew us.

The other Actors, by what their Comrade said to them, and by the Dress and Grimaces of this strange Figure, immediately took the hint that he must be something very uncommon; for which reason they all pretended they were highly obliged to him and saluted him very civilly. He returned their salutes with very grotesque Postures. He that first spoke to him, beg'd him to have Patience till they had rehearsed their Play; that it wou'd not be long a doing, because they had already rehearsed it three or four times; that there were only a few Scenes in which they were
not

not perfect, and that afterwards they wou'd listen to some of his performances if he wou'd do them the honour to communicate them to them. He therefore took a Seat, and waited till they had done what they were about. After that, Night coming on, they call'd for Candles, and all sitting down round about him, they beg'd him to read the Titles of those twelve Plays which he said were finished: Upon this request, the pretended Author, who play'd his Part to Admiration, drew a Paper out of his Pocket, and read what follows.

A List of the Plays,

Which the Batchelor *Dominic Joanco*, a *Biscayneer* Poet, has writ this present Year. The Titles are these.

The Hair-brained *Infanta*.

The Lucifer of *Ypres*.

The *Gandaye*.

The Creation of the World.

Noah's Ark.

The *French Evil*.

Almonds

Almonds for those that have no Teeth.
 The Rainless Summer.
 The Ragged Finery.
 A Pilgrimage to St. *James*.
 The Cunning Thief at the Gallows.
 The Signiories of *Biscay*.

These, adds he, are the twelve Plays which I told you were quite finished: I wou'd gladly have this last play'd first, because the scene is laid in my own Country, and 'tis one of the very best Pieces that was ever writ, the Intrigue of it being amazing; and 'tis Commendation enough, to tell you that it cost me no little time, and that I bit my Nails above twenty times in its Composition.

All the Players had much ado to contain from bursting out into a loud Laugh, at the odd Titles of the Plays, and they wish'd they had had more Leisure to enjoy the Company of the *Biscayneer* Poet. He that had first spoken to him, thanking him in the name of the Company, It rejoices me extremely Sir, says he, to have the honour to be informed of your Character from your own Mouth; for 'till now,

I confess to my Shame, I had never so much as heard your Illustrious Name: You are extreamly in the right to shew your self at the Court of *Spain*, and a Man of your Merit will without doubt be greatly esteemed here. I beg you, in the Name of my Companions, to favour us with that of your Plays which you your self are most satisfy'd with, though we implicitly believe your Reputation to be really as great as you tell us it is. You must give us your first for Nothing, as all new Poets do; and as for the rest, we will allow you whatever we agree for, and perhaps we may like them so well, that we may furnish our selves with enow to serve us a whole year, even though we were to borrow Money to pay for them. It is now late, and almost time to go to Supper; we shall have more time after Supper to hear you in my Apartment, where all my Companions will certainly be, and we shall be glad if you will favour us with your Company. There you may communicate to us the Talents which Heaven has endowed you with, by shewing us what Play you think fit. The Signioret of *Biscay*, answered
he,

he, is what I will read first ; for by that I hope to get the Reputation of a great Author, and procure my self Esteem in this Court. The Actor reply'd ; I cou'd not help observing the Title you give it of Signiorefs, when you might have called her the Lady of *Biscay*, which seems to me to be a word much more in use. I own it, said the feign'd Poet ; but I call it so on purpose : For the King writes himself only Seignior (or Lord) of *Biscay*, and not Prince, Duke, Count, nor Marquess : So, in the feminine Gender, I must not say Lady, but Signiorefs ; because too this word rhimes to Princess, Dutches, Countess, Mistress, &c ; and besides, I like this word the better upon account of its being new ; for, you know now-a-days every body runs after Novelties, and even the peasants despise what is old and common.

All that were present were hugely diverted at the pretended Poet's ridiculous Talk. I further observed, said the Actor, that you intitle one of your Plays, *Noah's Ark*. I can't imagine how you can fit that Story to the Stage, nor who can act it, for in my mind nothing
at

at all or but very little can be said upon that Subject. If you had seen my Plan, answered the feign'd Poet, you wou'd be so far from talking as you do, that you wou'd be ravished with the Invention, which is brand new; as indeed I am very happy in hitting upon Novelty: My Actors in that Piece are all such Animals as imitate humane Speech such as Parrots, Paroquets, Magpies, Jays, and several others; a thing which never before appeared, and which will be mightily admired for its agreeable Novelty. Upon this they cou'd no longer forbear bursting out into a loud Laugh, which made the Author ask them seriously what they laught at. To which the Actor that spoke for the rest reply'd; this Novelty will certainly please the Town prodigiously, since it makes us laugh thus upon the expectation we are in of getting a great deal of Money by it. There is no doubt you will so, said the cunning Author. But let us have done with the other Titles, upon which I will at a fitter time answer any Objections you may make against them, and let us now speak only of that which I intend shall be first acted.

We will defer talking of them, said the Actor, till we have sup'd ; and if you will please to come by and by to my House I will there wait for you with these Gentlemen : Whereupon he took his Leave of them, and promised not to fail waiting on them at the time appointed.

From them he went directly to his Associates, whom he informed of all that had past between him and the Actors, and that he was to be with them again at his House, who had the Money in his keeping : He told them he wou'd take care to hold them in discourse all the fore part of the Night, to give them an opportunity of stealing the Treasure, which they cou'd easily effect, by means of their false Keys, Pick-locks, and other Instruments wherewith they were very well provided. The Actors on their side, were preparing to play him such a Trick as his seeming Extravagance deserved, getting ready several Squibs and Crackers in order to terrify him ; for they thought he deserved even to be tost in a Blanket.

The

The appointed Hour being come, he went to the House of the Actor who had invited him, to read his Composition; where he found them all waiting for him. The Actor, seeing all his Company was met, said that Room was too small to hold them conveniently, and that they had much better go sit upon the Stage where they wou'd be safe from any Interruption. The sham Poet was of the same mind, and extremely glad at the Proposal, because the House being left empty, his Comrades might do their Job in a trice; for the Actors Wife, and even the Servants wou'd not for the World have lost their share of the Diversion they expected. Thus they left the House without a guard, and shut the doors after them; but *Faime's* Companions cou'd easily find a way to open them.

When they were come upon the Stage, they gave the Poet a Chair, shewing him abundance of Civility. Near his Seat was a Table with two Candles on it. Having taken out the Play, which was mighty nicely bound, and proclaimed Silence, he thus began.

A NEW
Comedy, called,
THE
Seigniorcs of *Biscay* ;

Written by the Batchelor *Dominic*
Joancho, a *Biscayneer* Poet.

The Interlocutors.

Don Ochoa,

A Cavalier.

Don Garnica,

Another Cavalier.

Gozeneche, Pot-ladle,

A Joking Valet.

Hold a little, Sir, said the Chief of
the Company ; is not one Name enough
for the Valet ? No, Sir, said *Jaime*,
for

for the first is his Christen-name, and the second is significative of the Part he is to play : For as a Pot-ladle stirs the Victuals, so he it is that stirs, over hawls and thickens all the Intrigues in the Comedy. You see he is not call'd so for nothing, neither are any of the others, which perhaps you may at first hearing dislike. You say right, answered the Actor ; be pleased to go on. Which he did as follows.

Gratia Galinda, the Seigniores of *Biscay*. Which is a very good Name to shew the Graces she is adorn'd with.

Garibaya
Gamboyna

} Her Maids.

Ordony

} An old Usher of the
Seigniores.

Aranelbia, The Seigniores's Steward.
A Forge for Iron.

Stay a Moment, Sir, said that Actor who was the Mouth of the rest ; is this Forge to speak ? No, Sir, said the Poet ; but 'tis absolutely necessary in the Play,

because mention is often made of it, as being the chief Revenue of our Country, and the greatest part of the Seigniores's Estate. Very well, answered t'other; but then it need not be put among the Interlocutors. That may easily be altered, said the Bachelor.

Item. *Thirteen Vassals of the Seigniores's.*

Thirteen! said the Player: Cou'd not you reduce them to a smaller number? By no means, Sir, said the Poet; for they represent Thirteen of the best Families in *Biscay*, and each of them, in the name of his whole Family, has a Vote in the State to consent to the Seigniores's Marriage; and if one were wanting, it wou'd be the greatest Affront that cou'd be put upon some one illustrious Family. I am very faithful and punctual in every thing that relates to the History of *Biscay*, and I wou'd not miss a Syllable of it, if I cou'd avoid it. Aye, but this will be very hard for us to act, said the Player; for we have

have not so many Actors in our Company. Take in more, take in more, reply'd the Poet : For such a Piece as this is not to be mangled for want of a few paltry Actors. Are there any more Characters, said the Comedian ? Aye marry are there answered the Poet.

Item. Seven Virgins, who are to Dance before their Mistress at her Entrance into Biscay.

Seven Virgins ! said the Actor ; where do you think we shall get seven Virgins, and at Court too ? Sir, said the Poet, there is no profit can be made without some Charge ; and then, to tell you the Truth, they are not to be searched, to know whether they are really Virgins (though it wou'd be better if they were so) but this may be supply'd too, by having them painted in perspective, and made to dance by Springs ; though still it wou'd be much better to have real Virgins. This indeed, said the Actor, is some Comfort to us ; for we can easily chuse that

number out of our own Company, reckoning in Supernumeraries : But I won't answer for their being what you wou'd have them. Pray let us now hear how your Play begins.

In the first Scene, says he, enter *Don Ochoa*, the first Lover, and *Gozeneche Pot-ladle*, his Joking Valet, in Country Habits, each having a Cloak and an Umbrello. But, interrupts the Player, what need have they of Umbrelloes if they have Cloaks ? I find, answers the Poet, you know nothing of the Climate of *Biscay*. In Summer, Sir, there are such violent showers of Rain, that you wou'd think the Sky was falling, and immediately afterwards the Sun will shine out so hotly that our Brains are almost boyl'd in our Skull. I believe you says the Player, and am satisfy'd : Proceed. He began to read the Verses in so ridiculous and so whimsical a manner, that when he had gone through about a hundred of them, the Players, seeing the whole Piece consisted of four or five Quires of Paper, and was written too in a small hand, quite tir'd with what they had heard already, and impatient of spending the Night

Night in listening to such impertinent Stuff, began to break silence with a deaf sort of a Murmur. Our pretended Batchelor, who wished for nothing better, upon this, gave such a hearty stroke upon the Table, that he shook the whole Stage, and bawl'd out with a thundering Voice, *Tacete, Tacete*. But his Audience not understanding Latin the Noise grew louder, and a Scuffle arose in which, — puff ! out went the Candles, and the Trick they had prepared to punish the poor Poet as he deserved, was set on foot.

They let off their Squibs and Crackers, which all flew upon the Poet ; so that what with these, and the Flames of Rozin which they threw up under their Trap-doors, he was in a very sore fright. He let them know that he very much resented the being brought thither to receive such an Affront, for in the Scuffle he lost his Play, at which he seemed to be extremely uneasy.

The

The Result of this Jest was that *Faine's* Gang, while the Players were thus merrily employ'd, had opened the Doors of the House, ransacked every Room, and in a Coffe found the Money they sought for ; which they carried to *Faine's* House, where it was divided among them : And because *Faine's* Wife had been the Inventor of the Stratagem, she had her share of the Booty, as in reason she ought.

The next day, the Comedian who had been thus stript, having occasion to purchase some Silks to make Cloaths, was terribly amazed to find his Coffe open, and much more so when he perceived that the Money was gone. He was at first so confounded that he cou'd not speak. But after he was a little recovered from his Trance, he ask'd his Wife, who had been in the House ? which she cou'd give him no account of. He immediately ran and informed the Officers of Justice of this Robbery. They searched all the Streets round the Player's House, but to no purpose. The poor Actor went to the Nobleman, who had made them the
Present,

Present, and told him their Misfortune : But he, thinking there must be some Trick in it, wou'd not give the least Credit to him : He fell sick with Vexation upon this, and began to doubt that this good Office had been done him by that feigned Poet, whom he order'd to be diligently searched for ; but he was not to be found, for he and his Companions had taken effectual care of themselves. These things being come to the knowledge of the Grandee, to whose liberality they owed that Sum, he was so generous as to make it good to them again. This cured the Sick Man, whose Distemper arising from the loss of his Treasure, vanished again at the Recovery of it : The Serjeants nevertheless continu'd their search after this Thief in the shape of a Poet ; which *Faime* hearing, he inform'd *Rufina* thereof, who advised him to leave *Madrid*, since they had Wealth enough to settle and carry on any Traffick elsewhere. *Faime* took her Counsel ; and thus retiring from *Madrid*, they took refuge in *Arragon* and fixed in *Saragoza*, the Metropolis of that Kingdom : They hired a House, and for
some

some time kept a *Mercer's-shop* ; where we shall leave them in Pursuit of new Adventures ; their Trade only serving as a Disguise for the better accomplishing of their Designs.

FINIS.



ere
ew
ing
sh-

BOOKS lately Printed for *E. Curl*
in *Fleet-Street*; and *W. Taylor* in *Pater-*
Noster-Row.

A Compleat History of *Magick, Sorcery,*
and *Witchcraft*. Containing, The most
Authentick and Best attested Relations of
Magicians, Sorcerers, Witches, Apparitions,
Spectres, Ghosts, Dæmons, and other preter-
natural Appearances, from the beginning of
the World to the present Time. 2. An Ac-
count of the first Rise of Magicians and
Witches; shewing the Contracts they made
with the *Devil*, and what Methods they take
to accomplish their infernal Designs. 3. A
full Confutation of all the Arguments that
have ever been produc'd against the Belief of
Apparitions, Witches, &c. with a Judgment
concerning Spirits, by the late Learned Mr.
John Locke. 4. A Collection of several very
scarce and valuable *Tryals of Witches*, in *Scot-*
land, England, &c. In two Volumes, 120.
Price 5s.

Irish Tales: Or, Instructive Histories for
the Happy Conduct of Life; containing the
following Events, *Viz.* 1. The Captivated
Monarch. 2. The Banish'd Prince. 3. The
Power of Beauty. 4. The Distrest Lovers.
5. The Perfidious Gallant. 6. The Constant
Fair One. 7. The Generous Rival. 8. The
Inhuman Father. 9. The Depos'd Usurper.
10. The Punishment of Ungenerous Love.

Written

Books Printed for E. Curll, and W. Taylor.
Written by Mrs. Sarah Butler, 120. Price
1s. 6d. Stitch'd, 2s. Bound.

Court Tales : Or, A History of the Amours of the Present Nobility ; with a compleat Key, 8vo. Price 5s.

Ovid's Metamorphoses, in Fifteen Books ; A new Translation, by the most Eminent Hands, viz. Mr. Sewell, Mr. Philips, Mr. Hughes, Mr. Pope, Mr. Gay, Captain Morrice, &c. Adorn'd with Cuts : In two neat Pocket Volumes. Price 6s.

The Adventures of *Theagenes* and *Chariclia*, in Ten Books. (The first Romance that ever was Written.) Done from the Greek of *Heliodorus*, In two neat Pocket Volumes. Price 5s.

The Life of the most Reverend Dr. *John Tillotson*, late Archbishop of *Canterbury*. With an Appendix of very curious Original Papers, 8vo. Price 3s. 6d.

Posthumous Works of the late Reverend and Learned Dr. *South*. Containing, I. An Account of his *Travels* into *Poland*, in the Year 1674, with *Laurence Hyde*, Esq; then Ambassador Extraordinary. II. *Orations* made upon extraordinary Occasions, when he was Publick Orator of the University of *Oxford*. III. Three Sermons on several Occasions. Published from the Original Manuscripts under his own Hand. To which is prefix'd, his Life, and a True Copy of his last *Will* and *Testament*, 8vo. In Two Volumes. Price 9s.

